

FILMED

JAN 25 2000

1425060

ANCESTRAL FAMILIES OF ROBERT LEE PACK

including

Archer, Borden, Callison, Carper, Crostic, Farley, Hughes, Leach,
Lively, Maddy, Morris, Pack, Peck, Shumate, Sovain, and Winter

Privately Compiled/Published

by

John F. Vallentine, Ph.D.
1081 S. 700 E.
Springville, Utah 84663

15 May 1998

FAMILY HISTORY LIBRARY
35 NORTH WEST TEMPLE
SALT LAKE CITY, UTAH 84150

US/CAN
929.273
P12V

PREFACE

This work includes the facts and story of the family of my maternal great grandparents, Robert Lee Pack and wife Emily Catherine Wood, and all known data about the ancestral families of Robert Lee Pack (b. 15 Jan 1863 at Table Rock, Raleigh, W. Va.), son of Bartley Pack and wife Hester Elizabeth Carper. (Refer to a companion work entitled Ancestral Families of Emily Catherine Wood (Pack) completed in 1995 for Emily's lineage.) This project has involved extracting and compiling from numerous manuscripts, documents, and correspondence accumulated over a period of many years but has also required additional research to help fill in the gaps. However, many gaps still remain unfilled and must await future findings.

This work includes under a single cover and title a total of eight pedigree sections of various length as follows:

1. Robert Lee Pack Ancestral Family (7 p.).
2. Pack Ancestral Line (Part I) (15 p.).
3. Pack Ancestral Line (Part II) (25 p.).
4. Pack Ancestral Line (Part III) (12 p.).
5. Farley Ancestral Line (23 p.).
6. Lively-Maddy Ancestral Line (22 p.).
7. Carper-Peck-Borden-Sovain Ancestral Line (33 p.).
8. Shumate-Leach Ancestral Line (24 p.).

Each pedigree section is separately paginated and provided with its own "sources of information" section. Each is comprised of one or more three-generation family unit writeups in which all known details about the parents and their children and children-in-law are included, but only the names of the grandchildren and their spouses. An abridged narrative format has been followed.

Special mention seems appropriate here of Orville Lee Pack, the last surviving child of Robert Lee Pack and wife Emily Catherine Wood. Orville passed away on Christmas Eve, 1997, before this second volume could be finalized and a copy placed in his hands. In a visit by the author with Orville and his family and relatives in April, 1996, many recollections relative to the immediate family of Robert Lee Pack were recalled and preserved for including in this work.

This work was written primarily for members of my immediate family, thus each family unit is identified by my own Ahnentafel numbers for the ancestral pair. Copies of this compilation are available from the compiler.

John F. Vallentine
1081 S. 700 E.
Springville, Utah 84663
(15 May 1998)

15 May 1998

PEDIGREE CHART

DATE
 John F. Vallentine
 NAME OF PERSON SUBMITTING CHART
 1081 S. 700 E.
 STREET ADDRESS
 Springville, Utah 84663
 CITY STATE

NO. 1 ON THIS CHART IS
 THE SAME PERSON AS NO.
 ON CHART NO.

#228 Jacob Carper
 BORN abt 1753
 WHERE Washington Co., Md. 17
 WHEN MARRIED 1773-4
 DIED 1826 /Tenn.
 WHERE Jefferson Co.,/18
 Mary Peck

#116 4 Isaac Carper
 BORN 1775
 WHERE Md. or Botetourt Co., Va
 WHEN MARRIED 20 May 1797 #239
 DIED 31 Aug 1838
 WHERE Botetourt Co., Va.

BORN 1755
 WHERE Sharpsburg, Wash- 19
 DIED 1826 ington, Md.
 WHERE Jefferson Co.,/
 /Tenn. 20

#59 2 Joseph Carper
 BORN 27 Dec 1802
 WHERE Botetourt Co., Va.
 WHEN MARRIED 16 Sep 1824
 DIED 9 Feb 1880
 WHERE Raleigh Co., W. Va.

#234 10 Abraham Sovain
 BORN abt 1741
 WHERE of Frederick Co., Va. 21
 WHEN MARRIED
 DIED 1805 /Va.
 WHERE Fincastle, Botetourt/22
 Lydia

#117 5 Susanna Sovain
 BORN 1774
 WHERE Winchester, Frederick, Va
 DIED 13 Aug 1844 #235 11
 WHERE prob. Botetourt Co., Va.

BORN abt 1745
 WHERE of Frederick Co., Va. 23
 DIED 1828
 WHERE Montgomery Co., Va. 24

#27 Hester Elizabeth Carper
 BORN 23 Nov 1825
 WHERE Brush Cr., Monroe, W. Va.
 WHEN MARRIED 20 June 1844
 DIED 27 May 1883
 WHERE Grandview, Raleigh, W. Va.
 #28 Bartley Pack

#236 12 Daniel Shumate
 BORN 14 June 1749
 WHERE Fauquier Co., Va. 25
 WHEN MARRIED abt 1774
 DIED 19 July 1826
 WHERE Monroe Co., W. Va. 26
 Milly Callison

#118 6 Hardin Shumate
 BORN 30 Sep 1783
 WHERE Rich Cr., Giles, Va.
 WHEN MARRIED 10 June 1806 #237 13
 DIED 22 Feb 1874
 WHERE Giles Co., Va.

BORN 5 Oct 1758
 WHERE of Rich Cr., Giles, Va 27
 DIED 22 May 1841/11 Sep 1841
 WHERE Monroe Co., W. Va. 28

#59 3 Jane Shumate
 BORN 17 Dec 1809
 WHERE Rich Cr., Giles, Va.
 DIED 18 Dec 1891
 WHERE Raleigh Co., W. Va.

#278 14 William Leach
 BORN abt 1740 /Va.
 WHERE of Prince Edward Co.,/29
 WHEN MARRIED
 DIED 1808
 WHERE Monroe Co., W. Va. 30
 Susannah Hughes

#119 7 Elizabeth Leach
 BORN 28 Dec 1788
 WHERE Sinks, Monroe, W. Va.
 DIED 3 Feb 1873 #239 15
 WHERE Giles Co., Va.

BORN abt 1742
 WHERE of Monroe Co., W. Va. 31
 DIED
 WHERE

15 May 1998

PEDIGREE CHART

DATE _____
 John F. Vallentine
 NAME OF PERSON SUBMITTING CHART
 1081 S. 700 E.
 STREET ADDRESS
 Springville, Utah 84663
 CITY STATE

NO. 1 ON THIS CHART IS
 THE SAME PERSON AS NO. _____
 ON CHART NO. _____

#56 2 Loammi Pack
 BORN 20 May 1791
 WHERE New River, Summers, W.Va.
 WHEN MARRIED 2 July 1811
 DIED 26 July 1858
 WHERE Brush Cr., Monroe, W.Va.

#28 1 Bartley Pack
 BORN 11 Jan 1822
 WHERE Brush Crk., Monroe, W.Va.
 WHEN MARRIED 20 June 1844
 DIED 25 Dec 1896
 WHERE Shady Spring, Raleigh, W.Va.
 #29 WHERE Rester Elizabeth Carper
 NAME OF HUSBAND OR WIFE

#57 3 Jane Lively
 BORN 10 Sep 1791
 WHERE near Orchard, Monroe, W.Va.
 DIED 26 or 28 June 1863
 WHERE Brush Creek, Monroe, W.Va.

#112 4 Samuel Pack, Jr.
 BORN abt 1755
 WHERE Augusta Co., Va.
 WHEN MARRIED _____
 DIED 1833
 WHERE Monroe Co., W.Va.

#113 5 Mary Farley
 BORN abt 1757
 WHERE Monroe Co., W.Va.
 DIED prior 1830
 WHERE Summers Co., W.Va.

#114 6 Cottrell Lively
 BORN 16 May 1763
 WHERE Albemarle Co., Va.
 WHEN MARRIED 24 Oct 1790
 DIED 3 Dec 1838
 WHERE Monroe Co., W.Va.

#115 7 Sarah Maddy
 BORN 16 Oct 1773
 WHERE of Rockingham Co., Va.
 DIED 12 Sep 1839
 WHERE Monroe Co., W. Va.

#124 8 Samuel Pack, Sr. (prob.)
 BORN abt 1725
 WHERE _____
 WHEN MARRIED _____
 DIED _____
 WHERE _____

#126 10 Francis Farley Sr.
 BORN 25 Oct 1703
 WHERE Henrico Co., Va.
 WHEN MARRIED _____
 DIED 22 Oct 1791 /W.Va.
 WHERE Indian Cr., Monros, /

#127 11 Elizabeth Crostic
 BORN 19 Apr 1718
 WHERE North Carolina
 DIED 29 Oct 1797
 WHERE Indian Cr., Monroe, W.Va.

#228 12 Benjamin Lively (uncertain)
 BORN abt 1737
 WHERE of Albemarle Co., Va.
 WHEN MARRIED _____
 DIED 1806
 WHERE Albemarle Co., Va.

#229 13 Martha (uncertain)
 BORN abt 1741
 WHERE of Albemarle Co., Va.
 DIED _____
 WHERE _____

#230 14 James Maddy
 BORN abt 1740
 WHERE Fairfax Co., Va.
 WHEN MARRIED abt 1759
 DIED 1783-4
 WHERE Orange or Rockingham
 Co., Va.

#231 15 Ann Morris
 BORN 17 Nov 1740
 WHERE Orange Co., Va.
 DIED 1844
 WHERE Monroe Co., W.Va.

ROBERT LEE PACK ANCESTRAL FAMILY

ROBERT LEE PACK (1863) and EMILY CATHERINE WOOD (1867)

ROBERT LEE PACK, son of Bartley Pack (1822) and wife Hester Elizabeth Carper (1825), was b. 15 Jan 1863 at Table Rock, Raleigh, W. Va.; d. 1 Aug 1912 at Fresno, Fresno, Cal.; bur. 2 Aug 1912 at Clovis, Fresno, Cal.; md. (lic.) 17 Apr 1885 at Attica, Harper, Kan., to EMILY CATHERINE WOOD. Emily, dau. of Berryman B. Wood (1834) and wife Sarah Lucas (1835), was b. 9 May 1867 at Mt. Pulaski, Logan, Ill.; d. 20 Sep 1954 at Fresno; bur. Clovis Cem. Children (Pack):

SARAH MAUD, b. 14 Mar 1886 at Harper, Harper, Kan.; d. 21 June 1956 at Fresno; bur. Clovis Cem.; md. 18 Mar 1906 at Breckenridge, Garfield, Okla., to HARVEY ALBERT DANIELS. Harvey Albert, son of Johnston Gamble Daniels and wife Armenta Duke, was b. 1 Dec 1885 at Harper City, Harper, Kan.; d. 1970 at Fresno; bur. Clovis Cem. Children (Daniels)--first four b. at Breckenridge, Garfield, Okla., #5 at Woodward, Woodward, Okla., and remaining three at Harmon, Ellis, Okla.: Myrtle Imo (md. Hubert A. Rothgarn), Ellen Marie (md. (1) Vaughn Smith, (2) Conrad Busch, (3) Louis M. Whitney), Melvin Albert (md. Vivian Duncan), Evelyn Marguerite (md. John G. Barker), Harvey Elmo (md. Lila Karjemaki), Ruby Viola (md. (1) Fred Adams, md. (2) John Eldon Miller), Edwin Raymond (md. Virginia S. Bach), and Helen Bertha (md. Louis Alfred Gosden). Harvey was a farmer, and the family resided lastly at 4586 N. College, Fresno, Cal.

*MABEL, b. 29 May 1887 at Dodge City, Ford, Kan.; d. 15 Nov 1970 at Ashland, Clark, Kan.; bur. 18 Nov 1970 at Pleasant Ridge Cem., Harper Co., Okla.; md. (1) 25 Apr 1906 at Tacoma, Pierce, Wash., to JOHN CLAUDUS (CURLEY) WILSON. John Claudus, son of James Marion Wilson (1858) and Mary Mahala Morris (1856), was b. 30 July 1880 at Feesburg, Brown, Ohio; d. 12 Oct 1943 at Shattuck, Ellis, Okla.; bur. Pleasant Ridge Cem. Children (Wilson)--child #1 b. at Tacoma, Pierce, Wash., child #2 10 mi. north of Laverne, Harper, Okla., and remainder 12 mi. northwest of Rosston, Harper, Okla.: Thelma Mabelle (md. (1) Tillman Floyd (div.), (2) Dee Witt Smithton), Claudus Brownell (md. Augusta Gwendolyn Winette Godsey Edwards), Venna Eletha Irene (md. John Fillmore Vallentine), Lola Lorraine (md. Everett Floyd Baker), and Florence Genevieve (md. Horace Greeley Wilmot). Mabel md. (2) 9 Feb 1954 at Woodward, Okla., to Ernest Beene, a retired Methodist minister. Mabel and Curley resided lastly on their farm located 10 miles north of Laverne, Okla. Refer to Wilson and Allied Families (D11) for further details about this family.

GEORGE ELMER, b. 16 Aug 1888 at Dodge City; d. 8 Jan 1957 at Salem, Polk, Ore.; bur. 12 Jan 1957 at Falls City, Polk, Ore.; md. (1) 1909 (div.) at Fresno, Fresno, Cal., to MARY E. PUTMAN, who md. (2) Mr. Allen. Children by Mary E. and adopted by Mr. Allen: Robert Lee (Pack) Allen (md. Wilma) and Frank Adrian (Pack) Allen (md. Mildred). George md. (2) ZELLA RUTH CARRESS, b. 16 Oct 1900 at Woodward, Woodward, Okla., d. 7 Aug 1954 at Dallas, Polk, Ore., and bur. 10 Aug 1954 at Falls City. Children by Zella Ruth (Pack)--first three b. at Las Animas, Las Animas, Colo., and remainder at Dallas: Goldie Irene Pack (md. Fred Raymond Sellers), Claudus Pack (never married), Raymond Lee Pack (md. (1) Anna Belle Scott, (2) Juanita Shields), Orval Glen (md. Helen Morgan), Hazel Mae (md. Willis J. Hart), Lawrence Revelle (md. (1) Phyllis Martin, (2) Betty J. Peterson), and Vera Evelyn (md. J. W. Casteel). George was a farmer residing in Oregon and California prior to 1920. He then returned to Oklahoma where he was recorded in the 1920 census, a resident of Garfield Twp., Harper, Okla.

- Shortly afterwards he moved to Las Animas, Colo., where he resided for about five years before establishing permanent residence at Dallas, Ore.
- IMO FRANCES, b. 12 Jan 1890 at Dodge City; d. 23 Jan 1976 at Fresno; bur. Clovis Cem.; md. 17 Feb 1913 at Fresno to CECIL KNOX MANDERVILLE. Cecil, son of Eugene Manderville and wife Helen Knox, was b. 12 July 1890 at Los Angeles, Los Angeles, Cal.; d. 15 Jan 1983 at Fresno; bur. Clovis Cem. Child (Manderville)--b. at Clovis: Evelyne (md. Siffroy Eugene Thomas). Cecil farmed near Clovis and worked for the City of Fresno until retirement; Cecil and Imo resided lastly at 4054 E. Bellaire Way, Fresno, Cal.
- ROY ELMO, b. 27 Apr 1893 at Canton, McPherson, Kan.; d. 28 June 1942 at Modesto, Stanislaus, Cal.; bur. Clovis Cem.; md. VERA MARIE MORGAN. Vera, dau. of Harry Clarence Morgan and wife Jennie Weigle, was b. 24 May 1894 at Nickerson, Reno, Kan.; d. 27 Feb 1979 at Modesto; bur. Clovis. Children (Pack)--b. at Clovis: Marion Virginia (md. (1) Otto Viggo Rehder, (2) Robert Horace Richter), Donald Lee (md. Ava Mae Garr), and Kenneth Morgan (md. Marjorie Eilene Wilken). Roy served 2 years in the U.S. Marines in World War I. Roy started out as a fruit farmer near Clovis but later got a job at Modesto, where he became prominent in civic affairs including being mayor of Modesto.
- EDNA VIOLA, b. 9 Dec 1894 at Canton; d. 5 Dec 1931 at Fresno; bur. at Fresno; md. 15 Dec 1912 at Fresno to LAWRENCE D. COBB. Lawrence D., son of James M. Cobb and wife Jessie Lewis, was b. 15 Nov 1892 at Lanes Bridge, Madera, Cal. Children (Cobb)--b. Fresno: Dorothy V. (md. Samuel Ray Crookshanks) and Doris L. (md. Chester A. Broadwell).
- WILLIAM LESTER, b. 5 Dec 1897 at Canton; d. 17 Oct 1900 at Enid, Garfield, Okla.; bur. Galva, McPherson, Kan. (D17).
- FLOYD IVAN, b. 20 Sep 1899 at Enid, Garfield, Okla.; d. 2 Feb 1962 at Elko, Elko, Nev.; bur. 7 Feb 1962 at Clovis; md. 3 Apr 1922 at Visalia, Tulare, Cal., to ZELLA E. JONES. Zella E., dau. of David S. Jones and wife Della E. Walker, was b. 27 Feb 1902 at Fresno. Child (Pack)--b. Fresno: Madelyn E. M. (md. (1) John E. Garrison, (2) Clarence Syvertsen). Floyd served in WW I (Calif., AS USRF). He lived at Clovis, Cal., Long Beach, Cal., and Snyder, Scurry, Texas. At the time of his death he was a rancher, residing at Eureka, Nev. Following his death; Zella returned to California and resided at 87 Lime Ave., Long Beach, Cal.
- ISLA MARIE, b. 10 Aug 1901 at Enid; d. 27 May 1971 at Carmichael, Sacramento, Cal.; bur. Clovis Cem.; md. 4 Nov 1920 at Clovis to PAUL M. REIBSLAGER. Paul M., son of Anton Reibslager and wife Thresa Watzl, was b. 15 Jan 1897 at Shiner, Lavaca, Tex.; d. 27 Jan 1972 at Fresno; bur. Clovis Cem. Children (Reibslager)--first two b. at Clovis, third child at Fresno: Bettie M. (md. Victor Walter Sweet (div.)), William Harold (d. infancy), and Thomas Lee (md. (1) Shirley Ackerman (div.), (2) Vita Mallet). Paul's WW I service was recorded as follows on his tombstone: Texas, WAGR, Co. C, 16th Ammo. Train. Paul and Isla worked at the shipyards at Oakland, Cal., during World War II. After retirement they resided at 2421 Beaumont St., Sacramento, Cal.
- ORVILLE LEE, b. 7 June 1911 at Clovis, Fresno, Cal.; d. 31 Dec 1997 at his home in Fresno; bur. Clovis Cem.; md. 25 Sep 1944 at San Luis Obispo, San Luis Obispo, Cal., to MIRIAM MAE ADKINS. Miriam Mae, dau. of Bert Nathaniel Adkins and wife Mary Jane Wagner, was b. 22 June 1915 at San Luis Obispo; d. 28 Apr 1988 at Fresno; bur. Clovis Cem. Children (Pack)--b. at Fresno: Dennis Lee (md. Sandra Lee Rodgers) and Richard Ellis (md. Patricia Dee Russell). Orville was only 14 months old when his father passed away, after which he grew up living with his mother on the farm at Clovis. He later received training as a welder and machinist, which trade he

pursued until retirement in 1976. Following entry into the U.S. Military in 1942 he served three years in the Navy Seabees (40th Seabee, Co A, SFIC, US Navy Const. Btln.), including two hitches in the Pacific Theatre building airfields in Saipan and Okinawa. Following discharge and return to civilian life, he continued as a machinist and was a maintenance supervisor for the Pillsbury Co. at Fresno at the time of his retirement. He resided lastly at his home at 4666 E. Gettysburg, Fresno, CA 93726, where his death occurred on New Years Eve, 1997.

Robert Lee Pack, called Lee, was born during the Civil War and named for Robert E. Lee, the Confederate general. After going to Kansas with some of his brothers, he married in Harper Co. and lived at Harper, then Dodge City, and then near Canton, McPherson, Kan. Lee was remembered as a gentle, mild person, often looking for greener pastures. He liked to read and loved books and taught school as a young adult.

Lee and family are recorded in the 1895 State Census of McPherson Co., Kan., in Spring Valley Twp. (A5); as a farmer he owned 160 a. of land, all fenced, of which 110 a. was cultivated. The farm was valued at \$3000 but the farm equipment at only \$100. The census reported that Lee had 30 a. in wheat, 60 a. in corn, 27 a. in oats, 1/2 a. in Irish potatoes, and 40 a. in prairie hay. During the past 12 months the farm had produced 500 lbs. of butter, 30 tons of tame hay, and 10 tons of wild hay. The additional inventory of the farm included 6 horses, 1 mule, 8 milk cows, 12 other cattle, 50 swine, 1 dog, 20 apple trees, 1 pear tree, 4 peach trees, and 8 cherry trees.

After moving in 1899 to Oklahoma, Lee and family lived near Enid, Garfield Co., until about 1905, when he moved his family to Fresno Co., Cal. When listed in the 1900 Census of Buffalo Twp., Garfield, Okla., Lee was recorded as a farmer but renting his farm, his wife having given birth to 8 children and all then living (A2); the oldest children had spent 4 months in school during the previous 12 months. When recorded in the 1910 Census of Fresno Co., Cal. in Twp. 2, Lee was recorded as a general farmer owning a mortgaged farm (A3). Lee and his family came to California in a single railroad car. The members of the family and the furniture were placed in one end of the car, the livestock tended by the boys were in the other end of the car.

Lee continued in farming after moving to California. On 2 Jan 1907 R. L. Pack purchased Lots 66 and 67 of the Poppy Colony, Fresno Co., from A. V. Lisenby and wife Emma C., Martin Madsen and wife Anna D., and M. L. Woy and wife Mattie C. (all parties resident of Fresno Co.) (B2, 383:5). These lots (located at the west side of Fresno) were sold by R. L. Pack and wife Emily C. of Fresno Co. on 22 Apr 1909 to Matthew P. Bowles and Mabel C. Bowles (B2, 431:260). The next land purchase was made on 16 Sep 1911 when R. L. Pack purchased from B. F. Shepherd, Jr., and wife Maria R. and Charles Teague (all parties of Fresno Co.) the N1/2 of Lots 1 and 2 of the Garfield Park Colony (located four miles west of Clovis), being additionally described as the N1/2 of the NE1/4 of the NE 1/4 (i.e. 20 a.), Sec. 25 (T12S R20E) (B2, 479:251). On 27 May 1912, about two months before his death, Robert Lee conveyed this tract to his wife Emily C. Pack (B2, 498:497).

Lee died only 14 months after his last child Orville was born. His death certificate records he died 1 Aug 1912 at Fresno and was bur. the following day in the Clovis Cem. (C2). His death record further records that he had died of pulmonary tuberculosis, lagrippe being listed as a secondary cause of death. During his last illness Lee quarantined himself by living in a small cottage behind the family home, with only his wife being permitted to visit with him. He also thought staying in the small cottage, this provided with wide windows, provided more air for better breathing. Nevertheless, some

of the family believed he had actually died of cancer rather than tuberculosis.

Lee's death certificate recorded he had lived 9 years in California, the last 4 years at the place of his death. On 4 Nov 1912 Emily C. Pack paid S. P. Good (all parties of Clovis) for Lot #2, No. 28 in the Clovis Cem. (B2, 512:211). Consideration for the conveyance of the cemetery plot was \$1 plus annual maintenance costs.

Lee's will reads as follows (B1, #3684):

"Clovis, Calif.; Fresno Co.; Saturday, May 11, 1912.

To Whom It May Concern

I, Robert Lee Pack, being of sound mind in the presence of T. P. Reid and Mrs. Lucy M. Carpenter as witnesses, do hereby bequeath my personal property and real estate to my wife Mrs. Emily Catherine Pack. She to have the use of the property during her life.

Robert Lee Pack

Witnesses: Thos. Proctor Reid
Lucy May Carpenter"

Upon the petition of Emily C. Pack on 18 Aug 1913, the will was admitted to probate (B1, #3684). In her petition she stated that Robert Lee Pack, sometimes known as R. L. Pack, had died on or about 1 Aug 1912 in Fresno Co., leaving real estate valued at about \$100 and personal property about \$100 but that all was community property left in her possession by the decedent. In two separate documents, Emily C. Pack listed the next of kin as follows:

- a. Emily Catherine Pack, surviving wife, res. Fresno. Cal.
- b. Sarah Maud Daniels, age 27, dau., res. Cooley, Okla.
- c. Mabel Wilson, age 26, dau., res. Englewood, Kans.
- d. George F. Pack, age 25, son, res. Fresno, Cal.
- e. Imo Manderville, age 23, dau., res. Shaver, Cal.
- f. Roy Elmo Pack, age 20, son, res. Clovis, Cal.
- g. Edna Viola Pack, age 17, dau., res. Fresno, Cal.
- h. Floyd Ivan Pack, age 14, son, res. Clovis, Cal.
- i. Ida (sic. Isla) Marie Pack, age 12, res. Clovis, Cal.

Letters of administration with will annexed were granted to Emily C. Pack on 2 Sep 1913; she was discharged as administrator on 14 Mar 1919. (The reason for omitting Orville from both next of kin lists is unknown, possibly a clerical error.)

R. L. Pack had also contracted on 1 Sep 1910 to purchase from L. A. Teague Lot #5 of the Garfield Park Colony tract but had apparently defaulted on payment. A court case of W. G. Gash vs. Emily C. Pack, administrator with will annexed of R. L. Pack, deceased, was heard on 12 Sep 1913. The court decreed in quieting title in favor of the plaintiff, declaring the defendant having no rights therein (B2, 533:285). The family recalls that at the time of his death Lee was buying a tract of land west of Modesto that later also had to be forfeited. It is also reported that Lee had been planning to move to Oregon at the time of his last illness.

Following Lee's death times were very difficult for his widow and family; making a living on the 20-acre fruit farm was a difficult priority. The principal crops raised on the farm were peaches and grapes; the family also kept a milk cow but had no room for beef cattle. Orville recalls the long hours he spent with his mother toiling in the fields. Roy also worked at

home to help his mother; and Emily's son-in-law Cecil Manderville was particularly helpful through the years.

Emily C. Pack, a widow of Fresno Co., on 20 May 1916 mortgaged the N 1/2 of Lots 1 and 2 of the Garfield Park Colony to Edna Williams of Fresno Co. (B4, 308:418). The mortgage was for \$1000 with interest at 7%; the mortgage was not released until 31 May 1921. In the 1920 Census of Fresno Co. (A4), Emily Catherine Pack was recorded as a farmer and widow owning a mortgaged home. Included in the household were her unmarried children Floyd I., Isla M., and Orville E. Pack (age 8, b. Cal.) and Cecil K., Imo, and Evelyn B. Manderville. Through the years several of Emily's married children resided periodically with Emily and Orville until homes could be provided elsewhere.

Of some help in paying off the mortgage was a 10-year lease Mrs. E. C. Pack gave on 14 Aug 1915 to W. Flanders Setchel (all parties of Fresno Co.) on a small part in the northeast corner of this property for \$25/year plus an additional \$1/mo. when lessee used the water right (B3, U:29). The small leased tract was described as follows: a strip of land 200 feet in length paralleling the Southern Pacific R.R. and 100 feet wide along a county road at Garfield, Fresno, Cal., located in the northeast corner of Sec. 25 (T12S R20E). A fruit packing shed was constructed on this site for use by local farmers in preparing their fruit crops for market. The fruit packing facility was serviced by a railroad that curved around the northeast corner of the Pack family's 20-acre fruit farm.

The family recalls that money received from selling a railroad right-of-way around the northeast corner of the farm in 1922 (B2, 688:152) was used by Emily C. to buy a 1922 Model T car. After this car was wrecked, a 1924 Model T was bought, but Emily had the misfortune of also wrecking this car. However, the latter car was not beyond repair and it was fixed up and kept and used until after WW II. Prior to and even after the family had a car, a horse and buggy was kept on the farm and was used by other family members including Orville. Family members were also able to board the train at the packing shed and ride into Clovis, some four miles distant.

The 20-acre farm, subject to the railroad right-of-way, was sold on 6 Oct 1943 by Emily C. Pack, a widow, for \$2,000 to Grant Uribe and wife Seferina (2124:150). Previously, on 28 Nov 1942 Emily bought two lots in the College Park subdivision of Fresno from Macie G. Robison and wife Valeria E. (B2, 2051:114). Moving in from the farm, this became her home at 1115 E. Fountain Way until shortly before moving into the nursing home. On 1 Mar 1953 she sold her home in town to her granddaughter, Myrtle Rothgarn (B2, 3275:242).

The death certificate of Emily Pack (Imo Manderville, informant) gave her place of death as Black's Rest Home, Peach & North Avenue, Fresno, where she had resided for only 19 mo. Her last usual residence was given as 3467 E. Sierra, Clovis. She was buried beside Lee in the Clovis Cem.

Emily's last will and testament verifies her practical, no-nonsense approach to both life and death. The will was notarized on 14 June 1947 and came from her own pen as follows:

"Fresno, California, June 4, 1947

In the State of California I hereby take this pen in hand to write this will of my estate. When I die or get killed I want Orville to have given to him the amount of money that he sent me while he was in the war services to be given to him and then the rest of my estate to be divided equally amongst all of the children and Orville to get the same amount, and all of the children that has given me money be paid to them out of the estate before it is divided equally. There is some that hasn't

given me money so they won't get as much and all of the things the grandchildren has given me such as presents give the nice ones back to them, and all of the handkerchiefs be divided amongst my grand-daughters and my pictures can be divided to suit themselves, and my quilts I want Imo to have the first pick for she has done so much for me. The watch goes to Evelyne Thomas and the rings goes to the ones that gave them to me if they want them. My clothes no one would want them, so give them to the Salvation Army or burn them, which ever they want. My sewing machine and all of the rest of the household goods be sold or given away and the clock goes to Doris.

Signed by
Emily Catherine Pack (signature)
on this the 14th day of June, 1947"

Family members still relate anecdotes about Grandma Emily, these in addition to her notorious car driving habits and her being a self-driving laborer in the fields. On one occasion her son-in-law Cecil Manderville bought his wife Imo some jewelry. After she complained he was being too extravagant, he returned the jewelry but bought with the money a pin-on watch for Emily, which she wore during the remainder of her life. As a teenage girl Emily once bought a gold key pin at a county fair; this also she kept and wore in later years.

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

A. Census Records.

- A1. 1870 Census of Raleigh Co., W. Va.
- A2. 1900 Census of Garfield Co., Okla.
- A3. 1910 Census of Fresno Co., Cal.
- A4. 1920 Census of Fresno Co., Cal.
- A5. 1895 State Census of McPherson Co., Kan.

B. Land, Probate, Tax, and Court Records.

- B1. Fresno Co., Cal., Probate Files.
- B2. Fresno Co., Cal., Deeds.
- B3. Fresno Co., Cal., Leases.
- B4. Fresno Co., Cal., Mortgages.

C. Vital, Church, and Cemetery Records.

- C1. Harper Co., Kan., Marriages.
- C2. Fresno Co., Cal., Deaths.
- C3. Clovis Cem., Clovis, Fresno, Cal.

D. Compiled and Miscellaneous Sources.

- D1 Personal Records of Mrs. Mabel Pack Wilson Beane, Laverne, Okla.
- D2 Personal Records of Mrs. Emery A. Wood, 2036 Ferris, Lincoln Park, Mich.
- D3 Personal Records of Mrs. Imo Manderville, 4054 E. Bellaire Way, Fresno, Cal.
- D4 Personal records of Mrs. Roy Pack, Modesto, Cal.
- D5 Livelys of America, 1690-1968; by John F. Vallentine; 1968; Natl. Assoc. Lively Families, Butler, Ala. (also Supplement, 1972; Second Supplement, 1982).

- D6 Personal Records of Mrs. Madelyne Syvertsen, 12592 7th, Garden Grove, Cal.
- D7 Personal Records of Mrs. Myrtle Rothgarn, 4456 E. Lewis St., Fresno, Cal.
- D8 Memoirs: My Life Among Pioneer West Virginians; by Walter J. Pack; 1955; Unpublished manuscript.
- D9 Personal Records of Mrs. Harvey A. Daniels, 4586 N. College, Fresno, Cal.
- D10 Personal Records of Mrs. Venna Vallentine, Ashland, Kan.
- D11 Wilson and Allied Families; by John Franklin Vallentine; 1986; privately pub., Springville, Utah; 51 p.
- D12 Personal Records of Mrs. Willis J. Hart, 1505 Harder Lane, Albany, Ore.
- D13 Personal Records of Mrs. Goldie Sellers, 541 Riverview Drive, Salem, Ore.
- D14 Personal Records of Mrs. Zella E. Pack, 87 Live Ave., Long Beach, Cal.
- D15 Personal Records of Mrs. Isla Reibslager, 2421 Beaumont St., Sacramento, Cal.
- D16 Personal Records of Orville L. Pack, 4666 E. Gettysburg, Fresno, Cal.
- D17 Personal Records of Mrs. Nettie Handke, 415 S. Ash St., McPherson, Kan.

PACK ANCESTRAL LINE (PART I)

FAMILY 28-29

BARTLEY PACK (1822) and HESTER ELIZABETH CARPER (1825)

BARTLEY PACK, son of Loammi Pack (1791) and wife Jane Lively (1791), was b. 11 Jan 1822 at Brush Creek, Monroe, W. Va.; d. 15 (C3) or 25 (C5) Dec 1896 at Shady Spring, Raleigh, W. Va.; bur. Grandview Cem., Raleigh Co.; md. (1) 20 June 1844 (C1) in Monroe Co. to HESTER ELIZABETH CARPER. Hester Elizabeth, dau. of Joseph Carper (1801) and wife Jane Shumate (1809), was b. 23 Nov 1825 at Brush Creek; d. 27 May 1883 (C5, C20) at Grandview, Raleigh, W. Va. Children (Pack)--first six b. at Brush Creek, the remainder in Shady Spring Twp., Raleigh Co. (variously recorded at Table Rock or Grand View):

WILLIAM PATTERSON, b. 27 July 1845; d. 30 Jan 1906 at Moundridge, McPherson, Kan.; bur. Moundridge; md. 3 Feb 1870 in Woodson Co., Kan., to SUSAN JANE JOHNSON. Susan Jane, dau. of John Johnson and wife Isabell, was b. 6 Mar 1854 in N. Car.; d. 19 Sep 1915 at Moundridge; bur. Moundridge. Children (Pack)--b. Moundridge: Elsie (md. Michael Schroff), Alla (female, d. age 20 years), Fred (md. Sarah Ethel Williams), Lola (md. Paul Scott), Claud (md. Addie Ringwald), Birt (never married), Nettie (md. Henry R. Handke), and Percie D. (d. infancy). After moving to McPherson Co., Kan., William Patterson lived near Moundridge and was a farmer. When recorded in the 1895 Census of McPherson Co. (A16), Wm. P. resided in Mound Twp. and was shown as having come to Kansas from Illinois. His farm consisted of 640 a. and was valued at \$15,000. None of his children were living at home in 1895; Lola was residing in the Fritz Koopman household, Claud in the Peter B. Krehlbiel household, Birt in the Christian Miller household, and Nettie in the Heinrich P. Mickel household.

JAMES P., b. 16 Oct 1846; d. 5 Apr 1924 at Canon City, Fremont, Colo.; md. (1) 24 Dec 1868 in Raleigh Co., W. Va., to MARIA SCOTT. Maria, dau. of Robert Scott and wife Angeline Hull, was b. 1852 in Ohio and d. 5 Nov 1887 in McPherson Co., Kan. Children (Pack): Rosie (md. Rufus Drum), Anna (md. William Elwood Zody), Ora (md. Rufus Drum), Leah (md. (1) John Thomas Rhodes, (2) J. L. Rogers), and Frank (d. infancy).

James P. md. (2) SUSAN CLOPHENSTEIN, md. (3) ELIZABETH PRATT, by whom he had no children. James P. paid taxes on 150 a. on Fat Creek in Raleigh Co., W. Va., in 1872 and 1875 (B9). When purchased from his parents on 20 Dec 1871, this 150-acre tract was recorded as being on Meeting House Branch (B10, C:24). James P. moved to McPherson Co., Kan., where his first wife died. When recorded in the 1895 Census of McPherson Co. (A16), he was shown as a farmer living in Lone Tree Twp. and owning 166 a. He married Susan in McPherson Co. and later moved to Hunter, Okla., where she also died. After marrying Elizabeth, he moved to Canon City, where he lived until death. He was a farmer.

MARY JANE, b. 18 Nov 1847; d. 26 June 1885 at Table Rock, Raleigh, W. Va.; bur. Samuel Scott Cem. near Table Rock, Raleigh Co.; md. 25 Dec 1866 in Raleigh Co. to SAMUEL M. SCOTT. Samuel M., son of James Scott and wife Rachel, was b. 29 Sep 1845 in Greenbrier Co., W. Va.; d. 28 Mar 1931 in Raleigh Co.; md. (1) Mary Jane Pack, (2) Celestia Davis. Children (Scott)--b. Raleigh Co.: Viola (md. George Lee Wriston), Festus (md. Anna Leef), Etta (md. Dean Charlton), Delaware Walter (md. (1) Frances Smith, (2) Berneice Lynch), Flora (md. Clint Rowland), Clayton (md. Maude Prince), and Clifton (d. infancy). By his second wife Samuel M. had a son E.

- Lowry Scott. Samuel M. Scott was a farmer and owned a farm on Fat Creek near Table Rock where he resided.
- SAMUEL W.**, b. 19 Sep 1849; d. 9 May 1865 in Raleigh Co..
- SARAH ELIZABETH**, b. 16 May 1851; d. 28 Mar 1877 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Oliver Scott Cem., Raleigh Co.; md. 14 Nov 1867 in Raleigh Co. to **OLIVER SCOTT**. Oliver, son of James Scott and wife Rachel, was b. 8 Dec 1840 in Fayette Co., W. Va.; d. 1 Aug 1901 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Oliver Scott Cem.; md. (1) Sarah Elizabeth Pack; md. (2) 5 Mar 1878 to Rebecca Jane Garten, b. 12 Oct 1843, d. 12 Mar 1906, and bur. Oliver Scott Cem. Children (Scott)--b. Raleigh Co.: Bertha (md. Mr. Meadows), Maud (md. Marion Meadows), Daughter, Kate (md. Emmett J. Carper), and Paul (md. Lola Pack). By his second wife Oliver had children Nora, Claude, and Charles Lewis. Oliver was a farmer and owned lands in Raleigh Co. on Fat Creek and Big Beaver. Beginning on 18 Mar 1886 Oliver and his father-in-law Bartley Pack began buying the various 10th interests in the 300-acre Clarkson Prince place located on Little and Big Beaver Creeks. On 22 Jan 1896 Oliver was conveyed by Bartley Pack and Martha their interests in the tracts owned jointly with Oliver (B10, P:112, 114).
- EVALINE VIRGINIA (C17)**, b. 27 Apr 1853; d. 25 Jan 1866 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem., Raleigh Co., W. Va. (C3).
- JOHN HENRY**, b. 30 Oct 1855; d. 4 Jan 1937 at Caldwell, Canyon, Idaho; bur. Roswell Cem., Caldwell; md. 7 Feb 1882 in Raleigh Co., W. Va., to **LUCY ANN MARIA CARTER**. Lucy Ann Maria, dau. of Hiram Carter and wife Lucinda, was b. 14 Oct 1857 in Putnam Co., W. Va.; d. 12 Feb 1920 at Midway, Canyon, Ida.; bur. Roswell Cem. Children (Pack): Daughter (d. infancy), Earle Alexander (md. Sarah Bernice Lewis), Son (twin of above, d. infancy), Frank Morton, Nellie Mae (md. William Womack), Eunice Olivia (md. Juddson Stewart), Oakley Consuella (md. Albert Lee Healy), Son (d. infancy), Marley Moore (md. (1) Mable Sullivan, (2) Geneva Harris), and John Ralph. John Henry was a farmer and resided firstly in Raleigh Co. He bought from Bartley Pack and wife Martha on 16 Jan 1885 a tract of 253 a. on a branch of Fat Creek (B10, H:1); and on 28 Dec 1888 he bought from them a second tract of 67 a. on waters of Cranberry Creek (B10, J:927). He left West Va. about 1898 and moved to Oregon. He settled first near Wallowa, Ore., but later lived at Parma and then Caldwell, Ida.
- ARBELLA B.**, b. 7 Nov 1857; d. 14 June 1932 at Shawnee, Pottawatomie, Okla.; bur. Hunter, Garfield, Okla.; md. 15 Nov 1877 in Raleigh Co., W. Va., to **FERNANDUS PHIPPS**. Fernandus, son of William K. Phipps and wife Sarah Williams, was b. 5 May 1852 at Beckley, Raleigh, W. Va.; d. 4 July 1905 near Hunter; bur. Hunter. Children (Phipps)--b. near Canton, McPherson, Kan.: Laura May (md. Robert H. Thomas), Daisy Lue (md. Caric Hill Herren), Lulu Kate (md. Willie H. Barber), and Roxie (female, d. infancy). Prior to the birth of their first child, Fernandus and Arbella moved from Beckley, W. Va., to McPherson Co., Kan., and settled on a farm near Canton. When recorded in the 1895 Census of McPherson Co., the family resided in Empire Twp., Fernandus being a farmer owning 80 a. (A16). Here they remained until 1900 or 1901, except for a brief period in western Kansas, then moved to Oklahoma and purchased a quarter section of land 5 miles east and one mile south of Hunter. Arbella sold the farm in 1913 or 1914 and subsequently lived amongst her daughters, mostly with Daisy Herren (D15).
- CHARLES LEE**, b. 30 May 1859; d. 12 Feb 1894 at Daniels, Raleigh, W. Va.; bur. Brown Cem., Daniels; md. 25 Oct 1882 in Fayette Co., W. Va., to **MARY JANE (MOLLIE) BROWN**. Molly, dau. of Charles C. Brown and wife Martha A. Blake, was b. 29 Oct 1859 in Fayette Co., W. Va.; d. 20 July 1922 at Mt. Hope, Raleigh, W. Va.; bur. Brown Cem.

Child (Pack)--b. Raleigh Co.: Ora Lee (md. Russell Cleon Ryals). Charles Lee resided on a farm in Raleigh Co. on waters of Little Beaver where he farmed. In her will dated 17 July 1920 and probated in Raleigh Co. on 13 Aug 1923 (B1, 2:125), Mollie Pack left legacies to her daughter Ora L. Ryals and grandchildren Beulah, E. C., Calvin, Mary L., Tessie B., and Nolan C.

JEFFERSON DAVIS, b. 8 June 1861; d. 26 Jan 1930 at Arkansas City, Cowley, Kan.; bur. Riverview Cem., Arkansas City; md. 31 Jan 1885 at Attica, Harper, Kan., to ELLA LENORA CHAPMAN. Ella Lenora was b. 25 Jan 1868 in Ill.; d. 30 Aug 1944 at Arkansas City; bur. Riverview Cem. Children (Pack): Eugene (d. young), Effie (md. (1) Ora A. Stacy, (2) Mr. Lane), Lenora E. (md. Walter Tinsley), Harold Francis, Owen Ash, Murel May (md. (1) Dewitt T. Woolley, (2) Loren Ross Carter), Oscar Robert, and Ernest B. Jefferson Davis accompanied his brothers to Kansas in the mid-1880's during which time he met and married Ella Lenora. In 1885 the newlyweds resided in Lake Twp., Harper Co. (A17), where he was recorded as a farmer owning 120 a., all unfenced.

After the birth of their first child in 1887 near Attica, Harper, Kan., they moved to Raleigh Co., W. Va. Here they lived for several years near Shady Springs, where their next five children were born. On 9 Dec 1893 J. D. Pack was conveyed by Bartley Pack and wife Martha (all parties of Raleigh Co.) a tract of 106 a. known as the Jacob Meador Place adjoining the J. E. Lilly Place (B10, O:105); the price set at \$1000 was to be deducted from J. D.'s interests in Bartley's estate. When Jeff paid taxes on this tract in 1897, it was shown as being on the waters of Big Beaver Creek (B9).

About this time they moved back to Kansas, settling first at Winfield but moved to Arkansas City in the fall of 1901. In Arkansas City Jeff owned and operated a restaurant. After closing up the night of 26 Jan 1930, he was murdered in an attempted holdup as he was getting into his car to go home. His wife was also wounded by the same bullet, which lodged in her shoulder, but she subsequently recovered (D16). The newspaper accounts at the time continue in that sons Harold, Owen A., and R. Oscar operated restaurants in Arkansas City, son Ernest B. lived in Kanorado, Kan., and dau. Mrs. O. T. Woolley and Mrs. Ora Stacy resided at Arkansas City; the deceased was also survived by sisters Belle Phipps of Shawnee, Okla., Mrs. John R. Smith of Daniels, W. Va., and Mrs. Wm. H. Brown of Beckley, W. Va., and a brother John H. Pack of Parma, Ida.

*ROBERT LEE, b. 15 Jan 1863; d. 1 Aug 1912 at Fresno, Fresno, Cal.; bur. 2 Aug 1912 at Clovis, Fresno, Calif.; md. (lic.) 17 Apr 1885 at Attica, Harper, Kan., to EMILY CATHERINE WOOD. Refer to "Robert Lee Pack Ancestral Family" for further details about this family.

MALINDA ANNA, b. 12 May 1864; d. 18 Oct 1865 in Raleigh Co.

JOSEPHINE KATHERINE, b. 1 Sep 1867; d. 23 Sep 1945 at Daniels, Raleigh, W. Va.; bur. Brown Cem., Daniels; md. 10 Nov 1883 at Raleigh Co. to WILLIAM HENRY BROWN. William Henry, son of Charles C. Brown and wife Martha Anna Blake, was b. 12 Feb 1858 in Fayette Co., W. Va.; d. 7 Aug 1950 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Brown Cem. Children (Brown)--b. Daniels: Ola Esther (md. Fred Deal), Wilfred Leland (d. infancy), Karl Victor (md. Clara Scott), Maymie Ellen (md. James Britt Helton), Ross Elmer, Hillie Charles (md. Winnie Blake), Harry Wendell (md. Sally Albertine Covey), Freda Christine (md. Walter John Campbell), Martha Ethel (md. James Henry Trail), Virginia Lois (md. Fred Lutz Minshall), and Ronald William (d. infancy). William Henry was a farmer and lived near Daniels. On his farm, later owned by his daughter Ethel Trail, was located the

Brown Family Cem.; many family records were kept by Mrs. Trail (D4). This family were originally members of the Disciples of Christ Church.

REBECCA LEACH, b. 27 July 1869; d. 2 July 1933 at Shady Spring, Raleigh, W. Va.; bur. Brown Cem., Daniels, Raleigh, W. Va.; md. 4 Sep 1889 at Shady Spring to JOHN R. SMITH. John R. was b. 8 Nov 1866 in Floyd Co., Va.; d. 16 Jan 1951 at Shady Spring; bur. Brown Cem. Children Smith)--b. Shady Spring: Grace E. (d. age 5 years), Dale C. (d. age 7 years), Dot M. (d. infancy), Hallie M., Ruie V. (md. Wilmer Snuffer), Ray E. (md. Dora A. Upton), Tillman J. (md. Ula K. Thornton), Lucy E. (d. infancy), and Joy (d. infancy). Rebecca L. received Bartley Pack's home farm at Shady Spring by his will. It was here that she and her husband lived and raised their family. Shortly after Bartley's death, the main house burned but was later rebuilt by John R. Smith.

Bartley md. (2) 17 Dec 1883 in Raleigh Co., W. Va., to Mrs. MARTHA BECKETT, widow of John H. Beckett. Martha was b. 9 Sep 1838 in Floyd Co., Va.; d. 16 May 1925; bur. Brown Cem., Daniels, Raleigh, W. Va. No issue by this marriage. Bartley had an adopted daughter, Allie Souder, who was b. 23 Jan 1878, d. 10 Sep 1895, and was buried in Brown Cem. (C7).

Bartley and first wife Hester Elizabeth lived on Brush Creek in Monroe Co. until they moved to Raleigh Co. in 1855. Shortly after becoming 18 years of age, Bartlet (sic Bartley) Pack son of Loammi Pack was conveyed a tract of 150 a. on Brush Creek by Henry Alexander (trustee of Henry Hull and wife Elizabeth) (B2, M:310). This tract was further described as adjoining lands of Henry Hull, Jr., and Anderson Pack, it being part of 200 a. deeded to Henry Hull (Sr.) by Samuel Pack Jr. (i.e. uncle of Bartley). This deed further informs that in March 1825 Henry Hull had executed a trustee deed on the 150 acres to secure debts to John Pack; and when on 17 Nov 1828 said tract was sold to Samuel Pack, Samuel directed the deed be made to Bartlet (i.e. his grandson). In 1845 and in 1850 Bartlet Pack was shown paying taxes on this 150-acre tract on Brush Creek (B4).

It was not until 7 June 1858 that Bartley Pack of Raleigh Co. and wife Hester Elizabeth sold this tract on Brush Creek, now recorded as containing 144 a., adjoining lands of Anderson Pack, dec., to Samuel C. Pack (his brother) (B2, T:380). This land was known as the Hulls place and was confirmed to Bartley by his grandfather Samuel Pack in his will dated 28 May 1833 (B3, 3:140). Included in this tract was a 19-acre survey that his father Loammi confirmed to Bartley in his will dated 14 Apr 1857, as well as Loammi's interest in 600 a. in Mercer Co. near Hectors Knob (B3, 7:91).

After moving to Raleigh Co., Bartley and family settled on Fat Creek in Shady Spring Twp., one source giving their home as being located 1 1/2 miles west of Grandview (D5). Here the family lived until about 1887 when they moved to where the village of Shady Spring is now located, On 14 Nov 1855 Bartley Pack purchased a tract of about 700 a. on Fat Creek and Piney River from Samuel Smith and wife Jane for \$1000 (B10, A:373). Bartley added to these holdings on 19 Feb 1869 when he purchased on 19 Feb 1869 from W. C. Woodson, a court appointed commissioner, 150 a. on Fat Creek on Meeting House Branch and 40 a. on the Big Branch adjoining Pack's own farm (B10, B:607). Bartley and wife Hester E. conveyed the 150 a. on Meeting House Branch to James P. Pack (their son) on 20 Dec 1871 (B10, C:24). Their farm then remained unchanged until 16 Jan 1885 when Bartley Pack and wife Martha conveyed 253 a. on a branch of Fat Creek to John H. Pack (another son) (B10, H:1). The remaining 791 a. was sold by Bartley and wife Martha on 14 July 1887 to Erskine Miller of Staunton, Va., representing a coal company (B:10, I:399). This tract was described as being located between the waters of Piney River and Mill Creek "where grantors now reside" with boundary references being Laurel Branch, middle of Piney River, mouth of Fat Creek, and John

Pack's corner; the purchase price was \$2331.05 at signing and a further sum of \$9533.95 covered by four future payment bonds. Bartley began paying land taxes on the original 700 a. in 1856 (B9); following various subtractions and additions in acreage he paid taxes in 1886 on 664 a. on waters of Piney River.

Bartley's second Raleigh Co. farm and home was purchased on 8 Dec 1886 from James E. Lilly and wife Elizabeth for \$100 and further compensation (B10, I:88). This 465-acre tract was described as being located on waters of Big and Little Beaver Creeks beginning in the head of a hollow of the Round Spring Branch and adjoined lands of A. C. Waddle, J. B. Powers, Lewis Meador, John Johns, and Dickey and Darrah and Neeley's field. Land taxes for 1887 included an additional 465 a. on the waters of Round Spring and 300 a. on Big and Little Beaver, the latter having been purchased in conjunction with Oliver Scott; but by 1889 all land taxes paid by Bartley were for lands on Big and Little Beaver and adjoining Glade Creek. Beginning in 1886 Bartley joined his son-in-law Oliver Smith in purchasing lands on Big Beaver, on which Bartley later released his interests to Oliver. In 1897 Bartley Pack's heirs paid taxes on four tracts of land: the 465-acre Round Spring Tract, 50 a. on a branch of Glade Creek, 50 a. on waters of Big Beaver, and mineral rights only on 100 a. on Big Beaver (B9). All known lands owned by Bartley in Raleigh Co. were within the confines of Shady Spring Twp., where he was recorded as a head of household in the 1860, 1870, and 1880 censuses (A2, A3, A4).

In his will dated 30 Jan 1894 and probated 1 Jan 1897 in Raleigh Co. (B1, 1:132), Bartley devised to his son Charles L. and his daughter Josie K. "the tract of land on which they now reside." That portion of the Shady Spring place that included Bartley's home was willed to his dau. Rebecca (wife of John R. Smith) after a life right to his wife Martha. The other children got an equivalent amount of money. Shortly after his death at the home place, the main house burned but was later rebuilt by John R. Smith. Because of the historical importance, Bartley's will is reproduced here in full (B1, 1:132).

THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF BARTLEY PACK
OF SHADY SPRING, WEST VIRGINIA

Considering the mortality of this mortal live, and being of sound mind and memory, do make and publish this my last will and testament, in manner and form following (that is to say): Firstly, I direct that all my just debts be duly paid and satisfied by my executor hereinafter named, as soon as conveniently may be after my decease. I give, devise, and bequeath to my beloved wife Martha one thousand dollars, provided she may need it for her support, and direct that she shall have all the household property, and that she shall retain control of the farm on which we now reside during her natural life. I give, devise, and bequeath to my beloved son John H. sixteen hundred dollars, money obtained by him in the sale of a tract of land sold to M. Erskine Miller. I give, devise, and bequeath to my beloved son Charles L. and to my beloved daughter Josie K. and her heirs the tract of land on which they now reside, and valued at twelve hundred and fifty dollars to be shared equally between them.

I give to all my beloved children not before mentioned an equal distribution of the residue of my property, including the amounts that they have already severally received, the receipts whereof I now have in my possession and direct that they shall all share equally provided I shall have sufficient property to make each share reach \$1600, the amount bequeathed to my beloved son John H. But in case I should leave property sufficient for each child to receive more than \$1600.00, then I direct that they all shall share equally. The amounts received by each of my beloved children to date is as follows: William P. has received \$800.00, James P. \$800.00, Mary Jane \$500.00, Sarah E. \$585.86, Arbella B. \$1400.00, Jefferson D. \$1585.00, Robert Lee \$1100.00, Charles L. \$681.00, Josie K. \$1290.67. And I further direct and

LUCINDA, b. 24 Nov 1814; d. 17 Nov 1895 at Sweeneyburg, Raleigh, W. Va.; md. 20 June 1833 in Monroe Co. to ARCHIBALD SWEENEY. Archibald, son of Delaney Sweeney and wife Priscilla Callaway, was b. 4 Apr 1813 in Giles Co., Va.; d. 30 July 1855 in Raleigh Co., W. Va. Children Sweeney)--all b. in Monroe Co., except for last child b. in Raleigh Co.: Delaney, Jr. (md. Katherine Elizabeth Shultz), Rebecca Jane, Wilson (md. Elizabeth Williams), Mary E. (md. George A. Kidd), Oliva (md. Evan Davis), Malinda (md. (1) Hardin Houston Carper, (2) John A. Williams), Eliza, and William Archibald (md. Samira Fipps).

In 1850 Archibald Sweeney owned 70 a. and 527 a. on Little Mountain (with his father Delaney Sweeney) and 17 a. on Rich Creek (B4). From his father by will dated 23 Oct 1852 he received "Pack land whereon he (Archibald) now lives," also an entry on Panther Run and a slave Carey (D35). Archibald sold most or all of his holdings in Monroe Co. in 1852 or 1853, moved to Raleigh Co., and there purchased land holdings in and around Sweeneyburg on Paint Creek (D35). In his will dated 27 June 1855 and probated 6 Aug 1855 in Raleigh Co. (B1, 1:5), Archibald provided for his wife Lucinda, including part of the home place, and appointed Samuel C. Pack executor; the will was witnessed by Lorenzo D. Pack, John Allen, and Alexander Evans. Lucinda was living with her son William Archibald in 1880 (A8); no will has been found for her.

LOAMMI, JR., b. 2 Mar 1817; d. 24 Dec 1817 at Brush Cr.

SARAH, b. 1 Nov 1818; d. 10 Apr 1885 near Athens, Mercer, W. Va.; bur. Bolen Cem., near Pettry, Mercer, W. Va.; md. 12 Apr 1849 in Monroe Co. to LORENZO DOW MARTIN. Lorenzo Dow, son of John Martin and wife Susannah Waggoner, was b. 14 Nov 1814 in Giles Co., Va.; d. 16 Feb 1888 near Athens; bur. Bolen Cem.; md. (1) 17 Mar 1840 to Susan Moran Shumate; md. (2) Sarah Pack. Children by Sarah (Martin)--b. Mercer Co., W. Va.: Mary Elizabeth (d. infancy), Loammi (never married), Samuel Pierce (d. young), Lucinda Anna (d. young), John Anderson (d. infancy), Lewis D. (md. Derenzie Rorrer), James Bartley (md. (1) Emma I. Rumburg, (2) Mollie M. Belcher), and child (d. infancy). Lorenzo D. was a farmer, resided near Pettry, and saw military service as a ranger. This family was recorded in the 1850-1880 censuses living in Plymouth Twp., Mercer Co. (A21, A13, A14, A15).

*BARTLEY, b. 11 Jan 1822; d. 25 Dec 1896 at Shady Spring, Raleigh, W. Va.; bur. Grandview Cem., Raleigh Co.; md. (1) HESTER ELIZABETH CARPER; md. (2) Mrs. MARTHA BECKETT. Refer to Family 28-29 for further details.

MARY (POLLY), b. 26 May 1824; d. 18 Aug 1886 prob. in Monroe Co., W. Va.; prob. bur. Callaway Cem, near Peterstown, Monroe, W. Va.; md. 3 Dec 1863 in Monroe Co. to VINCENT CALLAWAY. Vincent, son of James Callaway and wife Lucy, was b. 15 Dec 1809 in W. Va.; d. 6 Feb 1882 in Monroe Co.; bur. Callaway Cem.; md. (1) Elizabeth Thompson (9 Sep 1802-9 July 1858) and had children; md. (2) Mary Pack. Mary and Vincent had no issue. Vincent was a farmer in Red Sulphur Spring Twp., Monroe Co. (A7).

ELIZA JANE, b. 17 Nov 1826; d. 8 Sep 1895 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem., Raleigh Co.; md. 1 Feb 1849 in Monroe Co. to ANDREW JACKSON CARPER. Andrew Jackson, son of Joseph Carper (1802) and Jane Shumate (1809), was b. 1 Aug 1827 in Monroe Co.; d. 22 Feb 1909 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem. Children (Carper)--b. Table Rock, Raleigh, W. Va.: Samuel Lewis (md. Virginia F. Allen), Mary Jane (md. William M. Miller), Daughter, Chester Bullard (md. (1) Polly Ann Allen, (2) Virginia), Elizabeth Leach (md. David Robertson), Alexander Campbell (d. in youth), James Barclay, Sarah Ann (d. young), Benjamin Franklin (md. Emily Josie Williams), Joseph (md. Dot Hurt), Clara Burke (md. Joseph A. Bruce), Luther

(md. Tamsia A. Lore), Rettie (md. Robert B. Stewart), and Fannie Lee (md. Gratton L. Haney). Andrew Jackson Carper was a minister and farmer and lived principally in Raleigh Co. near Table Rock. Andrew Jackson md. (2) Mrs. Mary Ellen Bair, widow of Abraham Bair. His will was dated 24 Dec 1908 and probated 1 Mar 1909 (B1, 1:317).

SAMUEL CYRUS, b. 13 Jan 1829; d. 28 Apr 1903 at Baird, Callahan, Tex.; md. 1882 in Texas to ELIZA (maiden surname given as RETTIG (D36)), b. Sep 1845 in Germany, a German lady and artist. On 7 June 1858 Samuel C. of Monroe Co. bought from his brother Bartley Pack and wife Hester Elizabeth of Raleigh Co. the grantors' 144 a. (Hull place) on Brush Creek adjoining Anderson Pack, dec. (B2, T:380). This tract he sold to Samuel D. Pack (son of Anderson) on 1 Jan 1866 (B2, U:127). This tract was later credited with having 140 a. when it was bought by John L. Pack (brother of Samuel C.) (B2, V:76). Samuel C. was a Confederate captain in the Civil War in the Virginia Sharpshooters; it fell his lot to return the body of his uncle Col. Wilson Lively to Monroe Co. from Farmington, Va., following his sudden death on hearing of General Lee's surrender (D1).

Soon after the war was over Samuel C. went to Iowa. On 30 May 1867, now a resident of Fremont Co., Iowa, he conveyed a power of attorney to his brother John L. Pack of Monroe Co. to convey to Cornelius Cook of Mercer Co. a tract previously sold to Samuel C. by Cornelius Cook (B11, 7:6). From Iowa he went to Baird, Texas, and was a cattlemen and druggist. Samuel C. was recorded as a single person residing in Prec. 4 of Callahan Co., Texas, in 1880 (A18), when he was given as a cattle raiser. In 1900 he was recorded as a farmer residing in Baird and owning a farm free of mortgage (A19); residing in his household was his wife Eliza and a nephew Charles Pack (b. October 1885 in Va.). Having no children of his own, Samuel C. asked to take Charles Lee Pack, son of his nephew Henry Wirt Pack and grandson of his brother John Lively Pack, as a foster son, this after the death of the boy's parents and his two siblings. His request was granted, and Charles Lee was brought to Baird in August 1895 to live with Samuel C. (D36). Charles Lee later married Salome Rettig, an apparent relative of his foster mother, who was recorded in the 1900 census as having been childless (A19).

LORENZO DOW, b. 3 July 1831; d. 27 May 1893 at Brush Creek; bur. Pack Cem., Brush Creek; md. 23 Sep 1858 at Pearisburg, Giles, Va., to MARY JANE DOUTHAT. Mary Jane, dau. of Jacob Douthat and wife Maria, was b. 12 June 1837 at Christiansburg, Floyd, Va.; d. 28 Aug 1918 at (or near) Orchard, Monroe, W. Va.; bur. Pack Cem. Children (Pack)--b. Brush Creek: Son (d. infancy), Anna Maria (md. Henry Clay Brown), Jennie Lee (md. Charles Andrew Brown), Henry Wirt (md. Rebecca J. Thompson), James Jackson (d. young), Charles Bascom (d. young), Mary Lillian (md. Robert Green), Lucy Pierce (md. James Roles), and Thomas Webster (md. Regina B. Campbell). Lorenzo Dow was a farmer and Methodist; he also served as the secretary of the Board of Education of Red Sulphur Dist. for many years (D1).

Lorenzo D.'s home place was the north part of the Loammi Pack farm inherited from his father Loammi (B3, 7:91) and was divided east-to-west by both Brush Creek and the Pine Grove-Cashmere road. On the north side of the creek and near the east boundary was the original farmstead of his father and later home of Lorenzo D. This farm was his residence until his death. At the time of his death Lorenzo D. owned tracts of 219 a. and 28 a. on Brush Creek (B4). In his will dated 27 Apr 1893 and probated 6 June 1893 in

Monroe Co. (B3, 12:497), he appointed his son-in-law Robert Green to be executor.

Lorenzo D. in his will directed that his farm was to be divided into five equal parts and distributed among his five living children. He noted in his will that in the "southeastern corner of said lands is the family graveyard," which was to be reserved for burial purposes. In a decree dated 16 Mar 1898 the farm of Lorenzo D. was divided into five parts and assigned to individual heirs; the decree was also recorded in the deed books (B2, 34:421). A detailed plat of the farm and its subdivisions is found in the Monroe Co. Chancery Files (B12, File #1775); the easternmost subdivision, which straddled the Brush Creek (sic Pine Grove-Cashmere) road, was assigned to Jennie L. Brown. The remaining land north of the road was divided between Lucy Roles, dec. (received by her husband James Roles), and Lillie Green; the remaining land south of the road was divided between Thomas W. Pack and Annie M. Brown (the latter cornered the family cemetery). (Refer to the later discussion for further details about the original Loammi Pack farm.)

JOHN LIVELY, b. 13 Oct 1833; d. 20 Feb 1895 at his home on Brush Creek; bur. Pack Cem., Brush Creek; md. 12 Sep 1867 in Monroe Co. to ELIZABETH JANE ELLISON. Elizabeth Jane, dau. of Abraham Ellison and wife Mary Tuggle, was b. 29 Nov 1838 in Red Sulphur Dist., Monroe, W. Va.; d. 24 Dec 1922; bur. Pack Cem. Children (Pack)-- b. on Brush Creek near Orchard: Walter Jackson (md. Lida Ralsten), Samuel Lee (d. infancy), Charles Henry (md. Nora Miller), and Luther John (md. Eva Broyles). John L. inherited the southeast part of his father's farm (B3, 7:91), all lying on the south side of Brush Creek. In addition to the land inherited from his father, John L. on 19 May 1863 bought 130 a. on waters of Muddy Run which had been forfeited on back taxes by Hugh Caperton's heirs (B2, T:866), but found by survey to contain only 97 a. And then on 6 June 1870 he purchased from Samuel D. Pack and wife Eliza J. the 140 a. on Brush Creek known as the Hull place (B2, V:76).

The John L. Pack farm was sold in 1899 to Henry G. Charlton of Montgomery Co., Va. A power of attorney was conveyed on 3 Apr 1899 by Charles Henry Pack and Walter Jackson Pack of Louisville, Ky., to Luther John Pack of Lindside, W. Va., to make the conveyance (B2, 35:85). With the widow joining in on release of dower, the 520-acre farm on the headwaters of Brush Creek and Muddy Run was conveyed to Charlton on 5 Apr 1899 (B2, 35:69); the 1/4-acre Pack family graveyard, which was located along the northwest property line, was reserved.

John L. volunteered for service in the Civil War, joined Lowery's Battery (Confederate) at Greenville, and served for four years. In 1872 he helped James Sweeney organize the Pine Grove Baptist Church near his farm (D1). All of John L.'s sons living to adulthood were ministers.

Loammi's father owned 450 a. on Brush Creek in Monroe Co., and Loammi and his brother Anderson were sent up to manage this highland farm adjoining lands of Cottrell Lively (D1). It is easy to imagine how neighbors on the frontier quickly became friends and friends married. On 27 June 1811 Samuel Pack signed a note giving permission for his son Loammi to marry Jane Lively (C19), with Bartley Pack witnessing. The forthcoming marriage on 2 July 1811 united two of the oldest families of the Brush Creek area. Then on 12 Aug 1812 a second intermarriage occurred between Loammi's sister Mary and Joseph Lively, brother of Jane and son of Cottrell Lively (C19). The names and birth

dates of the Loammi Pack family as well as some of his other descendants are recorded in the "Lorenzo D. Pack Family Bible" (C20).

It is claimed that Loammi was named after a French engineer named Loammi, for whom his father Samuel Pack served as a guide after the Revolutionary War (D37), but this has not been verified. Loammi is firstly recorded in 1815 in paying taxes on one white tithe in Giles Co. (B6), and in the 1820 Census of Monroe Co. he is recorded with a wife, three daughters 0-10 years of age, and no slaves (A20). Loammi and his family are subsequently recorded in the 1830, 1840, and 1850 censuses of Monroe Co. (A9, A12, A1); corresponding slave schedules show he paid taxes on one slave in 1830 and owned two slaves in 1850 (i.e. one black male aged 30 years and one "yellow boy" (sic mulatto) aged 25 years). The latter two slaves were received by Loammi from his father by will (B3, 3:140), wherein they were named Henry and Harris, respectively. These two remained in the family and were later willed by Loammi to his children, i.e. Henry to Samuel C. and John L. and Harris to Lorenzo D. (B3, 7:91)

On 17 Apr 1823 Samuel Pack and wife Mary deeded to their son Loammi 225 a. out of the 450-a. tract at the head of Brush Creek, which had been patented to John Hutchison on 4 Aug 1788 but by him later sold to Samuel Pack (B2, H:31). In 1825 and 1827 Samuel and Loammi jointly paid taxes on this 450-acre tract, but in 1835 the land on which Loammi alone paid taxes was 225 a. on Brush Creek adjoining Anderson Pack (B4). In 1837 Loammi was shown paying taxes not only on this tract but also on 338 a. referred to as the Dunn place and another 19 acres on Brush Creek. The larger tract had been devised to Loammi and wife Jane by her father Cottrell Lively in his will proved 17 Dec 1838 (B3, 3:95); the 19-acre tract had been granted to Loammi by the state of Virginia in 1838 (B5). All three land tracts were contiguous and located on the headwaters of Brush Creek.

Loammi Pack and Zachariah Broyles exchanged small tracts on 15 May 1841: Loammi received from Zachariah and wife Susannah 6 a. and 70 poles on Muddy Run and Brush Creek adjoining Loammi's Dunn place (B2, M:72); and Loammi and Jane conveyed 7a. and 68 poles on Muddy Creek to Broyles (M:73). Lands on which Loammi paid taxes 1845-1850 confirm this land exchange as follows: 225 a. on Brush Creek adjoining A. Pack, the Edmund Dunn place of 331 a. (i.e. down from the original 338 a. resulting from the small tract to Broyles), 19 a. on Brush Creek, and 6 a. on waters of Muddy Run (i.e. small tract from Broyles).

Loammi's farm straddled Brush Creek. By his will dated 14 Apr 1857 and probated August 1858 in Monroe Co. (B3, 7:91), Loammi divided his farm, giving the south part to his son John Pack and the north part to his son Lorenzo D. Pack, but made the division so that both sons received some meadowland along the creek. Both the Loammi Pack home and the Pack Methodist Church sites were located north of Brush Creek at the east side of the land portion received by Lorenzo D.; this tract was owned in 1968 by Oather F. Martin. Lorenzo D.'s house was located about 200 feet north of the Martin residence. The Pack Church was located another 150 feet to the north. Loammi's house was located about 1/16 mile west of the church and up a little hollow (D23).

It has been said by their descendants that Jane and Loammi gave greater attention to matters of religion than wealth (D1); that he was a zealous Methodist seems certain. On 15 May 1841 Loammi and Jane deeded one acre of their land to the trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church, i.e. William Dunbar, Loammi Pack, Wilson Lively, Robert Thrasher, and Richard McNeer (B2, N:81). It was on this site that the Pack Methodist Church was built. It is reported that this was the third Methodist Church established in Monroe Co.; the nearest Methodist Church at the time was the Rehobeth Methodist Church east of Union, considered too far for the Brush creek Valley settlers to attend (D1, D9). The Pack Methodist Church was a double-log, hewn-pine

building with a gallery (or balcony) over the front door for the colored folks, who were permitted to come down to the mourners bench to "get religion" (D1). The logs were cut from native pine trees and hewn to shape by the slaves.

The Pack Methodist Church was still standing in 1955 (D1) but was then torn down by Leonidas M. Lively, a former owner of the property and a descendant of Cottrell Lively, because it had become deteriorated and dangerous to livestock as well as the public (D23, D38). One huge tree still standing (in 1968) at the church site shows evidence of having been used for tying up saddle horses and carriage horses. Descendants of Loammi and Jane also report that revivals were held frequently at the old church and often lasted for a few days, during which time Loammi and Jane frequently provided board and room. When the congregation moved to another location nearby, the Pack church building became the home of Mrs. Mary Smith Brown (D38).

The Pack Cemetery is located on a low ridge on the south side of Brush Creek and about one mile southwest of Loammi's home site. The grave sites of Loammi and Jane within the cemetery are no longer known. Both the cemetery and the John L. Pack home are on land owned in 1968 by Raymond Blankenship. The cemetery is mentioned in the settlement of the estates of both Lorenzo D. and John L. Lively; the common boundary of their lands cornered at the cemetery with the cemetery actually being located on John L.'s land.

Because of the many provisions in Loammi's will not covered above, it is reproduced below in full (B3, 7:91). (The unique spelling given many words is maintained and underlined.) The will conveys other lands outside Monroe Co. not otherwise known about, i.e. (1) 400 a. on the falls of Brush Creek in Mercer Co., Va., to son Samuel C., (2) Loammi's interests in 600 a. in Mercer Co., Va., near Hector's Knob to son Bartley, and (3) 110 a. on the falls of Brush Creek in Mercer Co. to dau. Cynthia McGee. Loammi's death resulted from the flux (C13).

An appraisalment of the goods and chattels of Loammi Pack, deceased, was returned to the court on December 1858 by appraisers Wilson Lively, James Roles, and Thomas Biggs; the inventory included negro "boy" Henry valued at \$200 and negro "boy" Harris valued at \$1000 (B3, 7:144). In an estate account submitted on 1 May 1861 by Samuel C. Pack, executor of Loammi Pack, it was shown that the widow Jane had been paid \$41.50 in cash and that \$9.20 in cash had been paid to each of eight shares: Bartley Pack, Andrew J. Carper, John L. Pack, Mary Pack, Lorenzo D. Pack, Lorenzo D. Martin, James McGhee, and Lucinda Swinney (B3, 7:433).

WILL OF LOAMMI PACK OF MONROE CO, VA. (W. VA.)

I, Loammi Pack of the County of Monroe and State of Virginia, being of sound mind and memory but somewhat advanced in age and laboring under some bodily infirmitiy which admonshes me of the nesessity promptily of making such dispositions of the property and effect wich I have been blessed with as appears to me to be proper and right in manner and form following to-wit:

First. Give and bequeath to my sons Samuel C. Pack, four hundred acres of land lying on the falls of Brush Creek in Murcer County and State of Virginia. I also give and bequeath to my son Samuel C. Pack & my son John Pack my boy Henry, by my said sons paying my son Bartley Pack two hundred dollars. I also require my son Samuel C. Pack to pay my daughter Sarah Martin my daughter ninty dollars. I also give & bequeath to my son Samuel C. Pack my son, one gray yearlan horse wich he has in his possession.

Second. I give and bequeath to my son Bartley Pack one entry of ninteen acres lying on Brush Creek in Monroe County and state of Va. joining the land of Anderson Pack and the land that Bartley Pack sold to Samuel C. Pack. I also

give and bequeath to my said son Bartley Pack all my interest in the six hundred acre survey of land in Mercer County, Va., near Hector's Knob.

Third. I give and bequeath to my daughter Syntha McGehee and to the heirs of her boddy, one hundred and ten acres of land to be laid off at the upper end of the five hundred and ten acre survey lying on the falls of Brush Creek in Mercer County, Va., so as not to include the mill.

Fourth. I give and bequeath to my son John Pack one part of my Tracy farm and one part of my home farm so as to give him som meadow land; the lines was maid and marked by me and my son Samuel C. Pack, so as to divide the lands between John and Lorenzo D. Pack my sons.

Fifth. I give and bequeath to my son Lorenzo D. Pack one part of my Tracy farm so as to give him som woodland. I also give and bequeath my home farm that I know reside on to my son Lorenzo D. Pack. I also give and bequeath my negrow boy named Harris to my son Lorenzo D. Pack. I also require my son Lorenzo D. Pack to pay Lucind Swaney my daughter two hundred dollars as soon as he can make the money, he is not to pay any interest on the money. I also give my son Lorenzo D. Pack my stock of hogs on my home place. I also bind Lorenzo D. Pack my son to pay Polly Pack my daughter two hundred dollars, as soon as he can make the money, he is not to pay any interest.

Sixth. I also give and bequeath to my beloved wife, all my house hold & kitchen furniture after making the ballance of the children equal with those that are married. I also give my wife all the horses I know own, and the increase to my son Lorenzo D. Pack. I also give my wife all my cows, and the increas to my son Lorenzo D. Pack. I also give and bequeath my Rifle Gun, to my son Lorenzo D. Pack the other to be dived between John & Samuel my sons. I bind my son Lorenzo D. Pack take good care of his Mother as long as she may live. I also bind my son Lorenzo D. Pack let his sister Polly Pack my daughter live with him free of any charges.

Seventh. I also bind my son Samuel C. Pack to pay my daughter Eliza Carper one hundred and ten dollars which he ows me. I also desir Samuel C. Pack and Lorenzo D. Pack to pay Eliza Carper ninty dollars out of the proceeds of my stock.

Eighth. I give and bequeath to my grand daughter Sarah McGehee one coalt & one cow. I also desier that the note I hold on Lorenzo D. Martin for one hundred and ten dollars be given to him. My waggon is to be owned by Samuel & John & Lorenzo for the use of three farms on Brush creek.

Ninth. If either of my heirs object or try to brake my will he disqualifies himself as one of my heirs forfeits all there claim in my estate. I do hereby constitute and appoint Samuel C. Pack and Lorenzo D. Pack executors of my last will and testamony whereof I have hearunto set my hand and affixed my seal this 14th. day of April 1857. Signed and acknowledged in the presence of

Ja. Roles
Wilson Lively
Joseph Lively

Loammi Pack (his mark)

AT MONROE COUNTY COURT AUGUST TERM 1858.

The Last Will & Testament of Loami Pack dec'd was presented in court (&) proven by the oaths of James Roles and Wilson Lively subscribing witnesses thereto and the same ordered to be recorded; and thereupon Samuel C. Pack the executor therein named appeared in court was sworn as executor & together with James Roles and Wilson Lively his securities entered into & acknowledged his

bond in the penalty of \$1000, with condition according to law. Certificate for obtaining a probate of the said will in due form is granted him.

Teste G. W. Hutchison, Clerk

(A1, A7, A8, A9, A10, A11, A12, A13, A14, A15, A18, A19, A20, B1, B2, B3, B4, B5, B6, B7, B11, B12, C1, C3, C5, C6, C13, C14, C15, C16, C17, C18, C19, C20, C21, D1, D5, D9, D18, D19, D20, D21, D22, D23, D24, D25, D26, D27, D28, D29, D30, D31, D32, D34, D35, D36, D37, D38)

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

A. Census Records.

- A1. 1850 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A2. 1860 Census of Raleigh Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A3. 1870 Census of Raleigh Co., W. Va..
- A4. 1880 Census of Raleigh Co., W. Va..
- A5. 1880 Soundex Index--Oklahoma Livelys (Pottawatomie Co.).
- A6. 1915 State Census of Cowley Co., Kan.
- A7. 1870 Census of Monroe Co., W. Va.
- A8. 1880 Census of Monroe Co., W. Va.
- A9. 1830 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A10. 1860 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A11. 1810 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A12. 1840 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A13. 1860 Census of Mercer Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A14. 1870 Census of Mercer Co., W. Va.
- A15. 1880 Census of Mercer Co., W. Va.
- A16. 1895 State Census of McPherson Co., Kan.
- A17. 1885 State Census of Harper Co., Kan.
- A18. 1880 Census of Callahan Co., Texas.
- A19. 1900 Census of Callahan Co., Texas.
- A20. 1820 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A21. 1850 Census of Mercer Co., Va. (W. Va.).

B. Land, Probate, Tax, and Court Records.

- B1. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Wills.
- B2. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B3. Monroe Co., W. Va., Wills and Inventories.
- B4. Monroe Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B5. Simms Index to Land Grants in West Virginia; by Edgar B. Simms; 1952; Rose City Press, Charleston, W. Va.
- B6. Giles Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B7. Virginia Land Grants and Patents.
- B8. Records of the Fremont Co., Colo., Register.
- B9. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Land Books.
- B10. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B11. Mercer Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B12. Monroe Co., W. Va., Chancery Court Files.

C. Vital, Church, and Cemetery Records.

- C1. Monroe Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C2. Harper Co., Kan., Marriages.
- C3. Grandview Cem., Raleigh Co., W. Va.
- C4. Oliver Scott Cem., Table Rock, Raleigh, W. Va.
- C5. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C6. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C7. Brown Cem., Daniels, Raleigh, W. Va.

- C8. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Births.
- C9. Fremont Co., Colo., Deaths.
- C10. Church of Christ Cem., Prosperity, Raleigh, W. Va.
- C11. Fayette Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C12. Fresno Co., Cal., Deaths.
- C13. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C14. Giles Co., Va., Marriage Bonds.
- C15. Pack Cem. (New), Brush Cr., Monroe, W. Va.
- C16. Broyles Cem., Mud Run of Rich Cr., Monroe, W. Va.
- C17. Monroe Co., W. Va., Births.
- C18. Mercer Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C19. Composite List of Marriage Bonds, Parental Permits, and Minister Returns,
Monroe Co., W. Va. (1799-1850); by Aubrey O. Smith (Comp.); 1962;
Beckley, W. Va.
- C20. Lorenzo D. Pack Family Bible.
- C21. West Alderson Cem., Greenbrier Co., W. Va.
- C22. Callaway Cem., near Peterstown, Monroe, W. Va.

D. Compiled and Miscellaneous Records.

- D1. Memoirs: My Life Among Pioneer West Virginians; by Walter J. Pack; 1955;
Unpublished mss.
- D3. Personal Records of Mrs. Imo Manderville, 4054 E. Bellaire Way, Fresno,
Cal.
- D4. Personal Records of Mrs. Ethel Trail, Star Route Box 75, Daniels, W. Va.
- D5. Personal Records of Aubrey O. Smith, 811 S. Kanawha St., Beckley, W. Va.
- D6. Personal Records of Mrs. Grace Thorpe, Rte. 1, Box 1060, Gridley, Cal.
- D7. Personal Records of Mrs. Nettie Handke, 415 S. Ash St., McPherson,
Kan.
- D8. Personal Records of Julius W. Pack, 1107 North C. St., Arkansas City,
Kan.
- D9. Personal Records of Mrs. Eva B. Pack, 723 W. Princeton St., Orlando, Fla.
- D10. Personal Records of Mrs. Murel M. Carter, 606 Illinois, Pomona, Cal.
- D11. Personal Records of Mrs. George W. Pack, 1214 E. Morris Ave., Modesto,
Cal.
- D12. Personal Records of Mrs. Meda Zody, 1122 N. 15th, Apt. 609, Canon City,
Colo.
- D13. Personal Records of Mrs. Lillian Shuck, Box 44, Moreland, Okla.
- D14. Personal Records of Mrs. Wilma Hawkins, Wallowa, Ore.
- D15. Personal Records of Reaford Herren, 5848 S. Kingston Ave., Tulsa, Okla.
- D16. Arkansas City (Kan.) Traveler; issues of 27 Jan 1930, 28 Jan 1930, and 31
Aug 1944.
- D17. Livelys of America, 1690-1968; by John F. Vallentine; 1968; Natl. Assn.
Lively Families, Butler, Ala. (also Supplement, 1972; Second
Supplement, 1982).
- D18. History of Summers County from the Earliest Settlement to the Present
Times; by James H. Miller; 1908; Hinton, W. Va.
- D19. Personal Records of Samuel Roy Brown, Cashmere, W. Va.
- D20. History of Monroe Co., W. Va.; by Oren F. Morton; 1916; The McClure Pub.
Co., Staunton, Va.
- D21. Personal Records of Mrs. Olive Fosha, 3725 Berkeley Ave., Alton, Ill.
- D22. Family Group Records Archives, Family History Library, Salt Lake City,
Utah.
- D23. Personal Records of Mrs. Leona Lively Peck, Peterstown, W. Va.
- D24. Personal Records of Mrs. Myrtle Rothgarn, 4456 E. Lewis St., Fresno, Cal.
- D25. Personal Records of Mrs. C. T. Bishop, Yards, Va. 24659.
- D26. DAR Patriot Index; by National Society of Daughters of the American
Revolution; 1990 (Centennial Ed.); Washington, D.C.
- D27. DAR Membership Applications, Natl. Soc. DAR, Washington, D.C.
- D28. Personal Records of Herbert Broyles, Lindside, W. Va.
- D29. Personal Records of Mrs. Opie McGhee, Lindside, W. Va.
- D30. Personal Records of John A. Kelly (deceased).

- D31. Personal Records of Mrs. Cephus D. Martin, Box 54, Ballard, W. Va.
- D32. Personal Records of Mrs. Elizabeth Feer, Marlborough Road, Scarborough, N. Y.
- D33. Personal Records of Mrs. Imo Manderville, 4054 E. Bellaire Way, Fresno Cal.
- D34. Personal Records of James H. Martin, Bluefield, W. Va.
- D35. Smith-Riffe Collection of New River Genealogy and Local History; by Aubrey O. Smith (Comp.) and Winton A. Riffe (Co.-comp.), and John F. Vallentine (Ed.); Microfilmed on 17 rolls at Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D36. Personal Records of Betty Pack Hallmark, 4903 W. Market, Austin, Texas.
- D37. Personal Records of Oliver H. Carper (as found in the Smith-Riffe Collection (D35)).
- D38. Gleanings of Monroe County, West Virginia, History; by Charles B. Motley; 1973; Commonwealth Press, Radford, Va.

PACK ANCESTRAL LINE (PART II)

FAMILY 112-113

SAMUEL PACK (1755) and MARY FARLEY (1757)

SAMUEL PACK, probable son of Samuel Pack, Sr., was b. abt 1755, reportedly in Augusta Co., Va.; d. 1833 in Monroe Co., W. Va., prob. at his last home on Brush Creek; bur. in the old Pack Cem. in Summers Co., located on the east bank of New River opposite and about one mile above the mouth of Bluestone River; md. abt 1776 reportedly at Fort Farley, now Summers Co., W. Va., to MARY FARLEY. Mary, dau. of Francis Farley, Sr. (1703) and second wife Elizabeth Crostic (1718), was b. abt 1757 in Virginia, prob. in Bedford Co.; d. 1823-1830 on the home place in now Summers Co.; bur. in the old Pack Cem. Children (Pack): probably all born along New River in now Summers Co.:

JOHN, b. 22 Nov 1777; d. prior 25 Dec 1825 (date of administrative bond) in Summers (then Monroe) Co., W. Va.; prob. bur. in the old Pack Cem.; md. 2 Mar 1801 in Monroe Co., W. Va., to JANE HUTCHINSON. Jane, dau. of William Hutchinson, was b. 3 Nov 1779 in Monroe Co.; d. 9 Jan 1856 in Summers (then Monroe) Co. Children (Pack)--all b. Summers (then Monroe) Co.: Samuel (md. Harriet S. French), Rebecca (md. Robert A. Dunlap), Archibald (md. Martha Camden (Patsy) Peck), Mary (Polly) (md. Dr. Richard Vare Shanklin), Julia Ann (md. Elliott Vawter), and Rufus J. (md. Catharine Fudge Peters).

John began paying personal property taxes in Monroe Co. when first organized in 1799 (B48). He lived on the east side of New River on Estill's Bottom, the next bottom below (north of) his father Samuel's "home place" and also adjoining lands of Thomas Wyatt. Here John resided when recorded in the 1810 and 1820 Censuses of Monroe Co. (A6, A12) and his widow Jane in 1830-50 (A4, A7, A1). This tract of 106 a. began opposite the mouth of Bluestone River and extended down river for 1 1/2 miles to opposite the mouth of Leatherwood Creek. It was surveyed to Samuel Pack assignee of John Estill on 3 Dec 1787 (B10, 2:37). When Samuel bought and moved onto the adjoining bottom upriver, his son John remained on Estill's Bottom. John began paying taxes on this property in 1806 (B4); and on 19 Apr 1808 John was conveyed this 106 a. by Isaac Estill (B2, B:506), his father Samuel having waived his rights. It was on this tract that John's son Rufus later established the lower Pack Ferry across New River. John Pack and Elliot Vawter, as assignees of Isaac Estill, began paying taxes in 1810 on 210 a. located further east on Dropping Lick (B4); however, their ownership was short lived when on 14 Apr 1812 they divided this tract and sold 105 a. to James Swobe (sic Swope) and 105 a. to John Chambers (B2, 2:22, 25).

John subsequently added to his lands by buying additional tracts on both sides of New River, all in present-day Summers Co. On 12 Jan 1807 John Pack of Monroe Co. was conveyed by William Smith and wife a tract of 200 a. on Little Pipestem, a branch of New River, then in Giles Co. (B22, A:83); this tract remained in the John Pack family until 11 July 1834 when his heirs sold it to Asa Ellison (B22, D:677). A second tract of 131 a. located on the west side and adjoining New River 1 1/2 miles below the mouth of Bluestone River (i.e. across the river from his home place) was purchased from Henry Alexander and wife on 21 Jan 1812 (B22, A:289).

In a memorandum of agreement dated 26 July 1838, John Pack's heirs conveyed for \$55 an "entry of land lying at the mouth of Pipestem and all the millstones and other property attached" to Matthew Pack (his brother) (D21); this conveyance was apparently for any remaining rights John's heirs had in Matt's 135-acre farm at the mouth of Pipestem since the conveyance did not change the acreage on which Matt paid taxes. In addition to his home place of 106 a. on Estill's Bottom, John paid taxes in Monroe Co. in 1816 on 85 a. located on the "north" side of New River adjoining Elijah Meadows (B4). In 1825 (the last year of his life) John paid taxes in Monroe Co. on the home place and 400 a. located on Indian Creek one mile above (east) of its mouth on New River.

On 2 May 1821--only about four years before his death--John and his father jointly invested in lands in and adjoining Peterstown, Monroe Co. (B2, G:395). From these three land bases--i.e. home place on New River and tracts on Indian Creek and on Rich Creek adjoining Peterstown--additional tracts had been added east of New River by 1835: 425 a. (probably the tract called Tower Hill), 150 a. on New River two miles below the mouth of Indian Creek, and adjoining tracts of 53 and 98 a. (B4). A Boardman tract of 500 a. on New River had been sold by John's heirs in 1832 (B2, K:275).

John died intestate at his home on New River. With Anderson Pack, James Dunlap, Andrew Beirne, Jr., William Shanklin, and Michael Alexander as security on the administrative bond, Robert Dunlap and Samuel Pack, Jr. (son-in-law and son of John, respectively) were appointed administrators of John's estate on 14 Nov 1825, the widow Jane having relinquished her right to administrate (B12). The names of John's six children are documented in several land transactions following his death (B2, J:649, K:406, K:275, K:371, N:274, N:277, N:279). Sales of personal property from John's estate on 13 Jan 1826 totalled \$1903.93 (B3, 2:507); buyers included Jane Pack (widow), Samuel Pack, Anderson Pack, Robert Dunlap, William Pack, and Archibald Pack. Samuel Pack made return of the sale on 17 Nov 1829, the other administrator Robert Dunlap having died prior to signing the document.

John was recorded as owning no slaves in 1820 (A12), but his estate was recorded as owning 4 slaves in 1830 (A4). Following the death of the widow Jane, the court ordered an appraisal be made of the negroes belonging to the estate of John Pack (B3, 4:469). The eight negroes were appraised at \$4175, each heir's share thus being worth \$695.83 1/3. Son Archibald held two shares, he having a bill of sale dated 9 Mar 1847 from son Samuel Pack, now deceased, "of his undivided interests in Shady and her children." In concluding the affairs of John's estate on 2 June 1856, Richard V. Shanklin, administrator de bonis non, showed the following distributions, with cash being used to balance the respective six shares: (1) Shady (female), age 42, to Rufus Pack, (2) Richard S. Hampton, age 21, to Archibald Pack, (3) Henry, age 18, to Rufus, (4) Abraham, age 16, to Archibald, (5) Clara, age 13, to Elliott Vawter, (6) Meshack, age 20, to Richard V. Shanklin, (7) Rachel, age 7, to Rebecca Dunlap, and (8) Josephus, age 3, to Elliott Vawter (B3, 4:469).

SAMUEL, JR., b. 22 Aug 1779; d. 28 Oct 1850 at Coopers Creek, Raleigh Co., W. Va.; md. 19 Apr 1802 in Monroe Co. to SARAH WYATT. Sarah, dau. of Thomas Wyatt and wife Rachel Byrnside, was b. 1784 in Summers Co.; d. 13 Dec 1860 in Draper Valley, Pulaski Co., Va. Children (Pack): William (md. Elizabeth Poage Shanklin), Andrew (md. Eliza Jarrell), Augustus (md. Margaret McDonald), Rachel (md. Henry Honaker, Jr.), and two sons dying in youth. Samuel, Jr.,

began paying personal property taxes in Monroe Co. in 1801 (B48). After his marriage, he made his first home on Brush Creek, Monroe Co. Here he was recorded in the 1810 Census (A6). About 1814 he moved with his family to Raleigh Co. (then Giles Co. but later in Logan Co. and then Fayette Co.) and settled on Coopers Creek, where he remained.

On 18 June 1805 Samuel Pack, Jr., of Monroe Co. was conveyed by Andrew Wilson and wife Jane of Montgomery Co. a tract of 200 a. on Brush Creek (B2, A:453); this land was part of a tract surveyed to John Hutchison on 6 June 1785 but patented to Andrew Wilson on 29 June 1787; it adjoined land of his father Samuel Pack (1755). Samuel, Jr., paid taxes on this tract from 1806 through 1821 (B4). Samuel, Jr., and wife Sarah of Giles Co. on 13 May 1820 conveyed this 200 acres located adjoining Hutcheson now Pack to Henry Hull (Sr.) of Monroe Co. (B2, G:203), after which time it became known as the Hull place.

Samuel, Jr., married a daughter of Thomas Wyatt (or Wiatt) of New River, from whose estate he inherited interests in lands located east of New River and south of Greenbrier River in now Summers Co. (B2, I:372, 374, K:643). One of these tracts was 333 a. located at the mouth of Greenbrier River (south side) and adjoining New River, which Samuel and wife Sarah of Logan Co. conveyed on 25 Sep 1828 to William Pack (their son) (B2, I:372). This tract had been surveyed to James Byrnsides and thence conveyed to Thomas Wyatt. On this tract the heirs of William (son of Samuel, Jr.) later operated a ferry across New River known as the Meadow Ferry. Possibly only of passing interest, but one John Dick had made derogatory comments about Samuel's wife Sarah and had been induced to publish a guarantee of her good character in 1806 (B2, B:190).

Samuel, Jr.'s last home was located in extreme southeastern Raleigh Co. on Cooper's Creek a branch of Glade Creek at the foot of White Oak Mountain. Because of county line changes, his residence was recorded in Giles Co. in 1820 (A17) and in Logan Co. in 1830 (A18), at which times he was shown owning two and eight slaves, respectively. When Samuel, Jr., was conveyed by Alfred Beckley on 24 Apr 1833 a tract of 875 a. on Coopers Creek of Glade, it was recorded as adjoining a 416-acre tract whereon Samuel then lived (B28, A:330). Samuel, Jr., also owned several other tracts in Raleigh and Boone Co. including some large surveys on Coal River.

In his will dated 1 Jan 1850 and probated 28 Oct 1850 in Raleigh Co. (B1, 1:1), Samuel, Jr., gave \$1 to each of his four children, i.e. heirs of William, Augustus, Andrew, and Rachel (Honaker). He specified he had previously conveyed land at the mouth of Greenbrier River to his son William and lands on Cole (sic Coal) River to sons Augustus and Andrew. He devised to his wife Sally (sic Sarah) a life right to all remaining real and personal property. He specified that three negro slaves Amy, Addison, and Henry at his wife's death were to have liberty to choose among his children whom they would live with, the other heirs being appropriately remunerated. He appointed James Byrnside executor; and his will was witnessed by Anderson Pack, Washington Boyd, and Jackson Vest. Details of subsequent settlement of his and Sarah's estate have not been determined. While his widow Sarah was recorded in the 1850 Census of Raleigh Co. (A19), his sons Andrew and Augustus were recorded in Boone Co. (A20), and his dau. Rachel and her family in Pulaski Co., Va. (A21). His son William had died at his home at the mouth of Greenbrier River in 1837.

ELIZABETH (BETSY), b. 3 Oct 1781; d. 9 Jan 1867 near Lindside, Monroe, W. Va.; bur. Dickason Cem. near Lindside; md. JACOB DICKASON. Jacob, son of a Mr. Dickason and wife Ann, was b. 15 Nov 1789 of Augusta Co., Va.; d. 18 Nov 1879 in Monroe Co.; bur. Dickason Cem. A son Samuel was b. 18 Oct 1813 and d. 13 June 1828; bur. in Dickason Cem. A second son supposedly served in the Confederate Army but never returned, but this is not verified and seems doubtful. Jacob and Betsey lived briefly on the Samuel Pack home place on New River, now Summers Co., but soon moved to the valley of Peters Mountain in Monroe Co., where they remained.

In 1853 Jacob Dickason was taxed on tracts of 83 a., 48 a., 58 a., and 174 a. in the Valley (of Peters Mountain), on 39 a. on the north side of Peters Mtn., on 30 a. on the headwaters of Rich Creek, and 259 a. at the foot of Peters Mtn. (B4). Jacob's will was dated 22 June 1875 and probated 26 Nov 1879 in Monroe Co. (B3, 11:537). Having no surviving children, Jacob divided his property among his former slaves Lewis, James, and Hugh. He appointed Reaburn Dickason (colored man) his executor. It is understood that Jacob had previously given property to other former slaves. All of his former slaves reportedly took the surname of Dickason (D3).

MATTHEW, b. 1 Apr 1783; d. 16 Sep 1858 in Summers Co. at the mouth of Bluestone; prob. bur. in the old Pack Cem., or possibly in the Flatfield Cem. located at the mouth of Bluestone on the west side of New River; md. (1) 5 Sep 1806 in Monroe Co. to CATHERINE (KATEY) LILLY, b. abt 1784 and dau. of Robert Lilly, Sr., and wife Frances Moody. Children by Katey (Pack): Virginia or Jane (md. Edward Ballengee and moved to Berien Co., Mich.), John (md. (1) Elizabeth B. Harvey, md. (2) Mary Harvey, md. (3) Elizabeth Rollyson), Robert B. (md. Rhoda Basham), Frances (Fanny) (md. William Lilly), Samuel (md. Nancy Meador), Belinda (md. Tolevor "Tommytite" Meador), Mary (Polly) (md. James Morris), and James A. (md. Mary C. Harvey). Matthew md. (2) FRANCES LILLY. His second wife Frances (sometimes confused as being synonymous with his first wife Kate), dau. of Edmund Lilly and wife Sarah Moody, was b. 1782 in W. Va. (also given as 1782 in Franklin Co., Va. (D34)); d. 29 Apr 1860 in Mercer (now Summers) Co.

Matthew was a farmer and began paying personal property taxes in Monroe Co. in 1806 (B48). However, his long-time residence was on the west side of New River at the mouth of Bluestone. When listed in the 1810-1830 Censuses of Giles Co., Va. (A8, A17, and A14) and the 1840 and 1850 Censuses of Mercer Co., Va. (W. Va.) (A22, A16), Matthew was shown as owning no slaves. Matthew paid personal property taxes in then Giles Co. beginning in 1811 but apparently owned no land until devised in his father's will the tract of 135 a. at the mouth of Bluestone (B3, 3:140), on which Matthew had lived for many years. In 1837 this 135-acre tract "at Pack's Ferry" was the sole real estate on which Matthew paid taxes (B26). In a memorandum of agreement dated 26 July 1838 the heirs of John Pack conveyed to Matthew Pack for \$55 "an entry of land lying at the mouth of Pipestem and all the millstones and property attached" (D21), this apparently being within the 135-acre tract. Out of this tract Matthew gave to his son Samuel for love and affection 25 acres on 23 Apr 1844 (B27, 2:105); however, this tract was later quitclaimed by Samuel and wife Nancy of Raleigh Co. back to the other heirs of Matthew Pack (B27, 5:518; B29, A:58).

On 4 Nov 1858 Tolevor Meador, as administrator of the estate of Matthew Pack, deceased, posted administrative bond with Gordon S.

Johnson, Massina C. Barker, and Isaac J. Ellison as security (B30, 1:256). An appraisal of the personal estate was made on 25 Nov 1858 by William M. Meador and Green W. Meador (B15, 1:394). The property was meager; at the sale held 27 Nov 1858, items were sold to the widow Frances Pack and to Toliver Meador.

On 21 Apr 1860 the heirs of Matthew Pack for \$450 conveyed the home place--the 135 acres patented to Samuel Pack on 21 June 1795--to Toliver Meador (husband of Matt's daughter Belinda) (B27, 5:254). The tract was then described as being on New River above the mouth of Big Bluestone, its boundary going from the bank of New River, mouth of Bluestone, David Frazier's land, crossing Pipestem Creek, and along River Ridge. The heirs and grantors listed on this deed were John Pack, William Lilly and wife Frances, Robert B. Pack and wife Rhody, and James A. Pack and wife Mary C. Son Samuel had presumably previously released his interests, and daughters Mary (Polly) and Virginia or Jane had previously died.

BARTLEY (also BARTLETT), b. 26 Feb 1785; d. 1834 in Monroe (now Summers) Co.; bur. in old Pack Cem.; md. 12 Oct 1811 in Monroe Co. to RHODICIE (Dicie) HARVEY. Dicie, dau. of John Harvey and wife Elizabeth, was b. abt 1790 on New River; md. (1) Bartley Pack, md. (2) Mr. McDonald or McDaniel. Children (Pack): Mary (Polly) (md. John H. Dunn), Savina (or Sabina) (md. James McLaughlin), Mahala (md. Isaac G. Young), Emily J. (md. Grandison Calloway Landcraft), and Josephus Bartlett (sometimes called Joseph) (md. Catherine M. Dunn). Bartley inherited the lower (north) end of the Samuel Pack home place on the east side of New River. He was a farmer and owned and operated the upper Packs Ferry (later known as Landcraft and then Haines Ferry).

Bartley began paying personal property taxes in Monroe Co. in 1807 (B48). On 16 Apr 1811, shortly before his marriage, Bartley was conveyed by his father Samuel Pack a tract of 50 a. on the north (sic east) side of New River (B2, C:329). This tract was further described as being on the top of the River Ridge opposite the mouth of Bluestone between where Samuel now lives and Estill's Bottom; it had been surveyed to Samuel on 5 Oct 1796. Bartley began paying taxes on this tract in 1812 (B4). It is possible that Bartley resided on this tract for a few years after his marriage, but it seems more likely that his residence was continuously on the Samuel Pack home place.

Bartley added to his land holdings on 10 Feb 1820 when he bought of Francis Keatley three adjoining tracts on New River: 62 and 171 a. (being the 233 a. patented to James Ellison on 24 July 1790) and 25 a. (part of a patent to Francis Keatley on 18 Sep 1809) (B2, G:175). His land ownership as above was confirmed when he paid taxes in 1825 and 1827 as follows: 50 a. on New River Ridge above Samuel Pack, an adjoining 62 a. on New River, 171 a. adjoining John Abbott, and 24 a. above Samuel Pack's line (B4).

Further additions were made to Bartley's land holdings on 12 Dec 1826 when he bought of Daniel Boardman and wife Hetty of New York City a tract of about 675 a. adjoining Bartley's land and extending to the top of Wolf Cr. Mtn., also about 370 a. on the river bank (sic New River) adjoining lands of John Pack's heirs and Samuel Pack's 50-acre survey (B2, J:500). As shown by the taxes on his estate paid in 1835 (B4), his land holdings on the east side of New River were completed by will of his father Samuel dated 28 May 1833 and probated July 1833 (B3, 3:140). Devised to him by Samuel was the 149-acre "part of my old plantation that he

(sic Bartley) now lives on at the mouth of a branch where I formerly had a still house, to include the lower part of said plantation" but excluding the half-acre cemetery. Also devised was the ferry boat and boat landing on each side of New River together with land adjoining Billy (sic Samuel's son William) Pack's line.

Bartley also owned a tract of land in Raleigh Co. referred to as Bart's Glade on which he built a house reportedly used primarily as a hunting lodge (D21). This 200-acre tract was bought by Bartley from Lewis Stuart on 19 Sep 1831 and described as located on Glade Creek, beginning at Nine Mile Creek (as measured from the mouth of Bluestone River) (D21).

Monroe Co. census records show that Bartley owned no slaves in 1820 (A12) but two slaves in 1830 (A4). In his will dated 24 Nov 1833 and probated in Monroe Co. in April 1834 (B3, 3:154), he specified the disposition of five slaves: Amy was given to his daughter Polly but was to have choice of where she lived; Charles and Meshack were given to Josephus for his having taken care of his mother; and Abraham and Fanny were to "remain where they are." Abraham and Fanny had received special provisions when they had been devised earlier in the year 1833 by Samuel to his son Bartley (B3, 3:140).

Bartley further specified in his will that his Glade lands were to be sold in 100- or 200-a. lots, made reference to his upper place known as the Keatley place, specified that his home place with ferry boat and all lands attached were to be leased for 2 or 3 years, and concluded that the remainder of his estate was to be divided among all his children. His wife Dicie and Richard V. Shanklin were named executors; Richard V. Shanklin, Joseph Harvey, and Rufus Pack witnessed the will. Executor bond was set by the court at \$4000 (B3, 3:154). Bartley's personal estate--excluding slaves--was appraised on 17 May 1834 at \$836.41 (B3, 3:164). At the estate sale of personal property, which was returned to the court in May 1838, buyers included Richard V. Shanklin, Archibald Pack, Mrs. Pack (sic the widow Dicie), Polly Pack, Mahala Pack, William Pack, Robert Pack, Samuel Pack, Abraham (said slave buying a canoe), Lowe Pack, Anderson Pack, Joseph Pack, and Rufus Pack (B3, 3:376). When the sale made 20 Aug 1835 of 200 a. in Giles (now Raleigh) Co. for \$290 was included, total sales amounted to \$1035.83.

The estate lands of Bartley on New River were still intact in 1845 (B4), and sales and distributions were concentrated in 1853, possibly not until after the death of the widow Dicie, who has not been located in the 1850 census. Grandison C. Landcraft owned one share in the homeplace of Bartley through his wife's inheritance. In 1853 the other heirs of Bartley Pack conveyed their interests in the home place of Bartley Pack, deceased, and associated ferry and ferry landings to Landcraft (B2, R:421, 5:512). Reference is made in a deed dated 14 Mar 1853 (B2, R:445) to a memorandum made in 1840 between Dicy Pack of Monroe Co. and G. C. Landcraft of Fayette Co. wherein Mrs. Pack conveyed her interests in the ferry place for Landcraft's wife's interests in the Keatley place; the heirs of Bartley Pack bound themselves to this memorandum made "by said Dicy Pack late Dicy McDonald." However, in another deed she was referred to as Dicy Pack late Dicy McDaniel (B2, R:512). Grandison Landcraft and wife Emily J. nee Pack were initially buried in the old Pack Cem. (later Haynes Cem.) on New River but

- were reinterred in the Greenbrier Cem. (C12) at Hinton, Summers Co., during preparation of the Bluestone Reservoir site.
- MARY (POLLY), b. 23 Aug 1788; d. 4 Jan 1871 on Hans Creek, Monroe Co.; md. 12 Aug 1812 in Monroe Co. to JOSEPH LIVELY. Joseph, son of Cottrell Lively and wife Sarah Maddy, was b. 1 May 1792 near Orchard, Monroe, W. Va.; d. 13 Jan 1862 in Monroe Co. Mary and Joseph were buried "in the home cemetery on a hill north of the house," presumably the Thrasher Lively Cem. on Hans Creek (also known as the Joseph Lively, Jr., Cem.). Children (Lively): Elizabeth (md. Charles Lawrence), Malinda (md. George Thompson), Loammi (md. (1) Matilda Jones, md. (2) Sena Dimmitt), Emily (md. Isaac Ellison), Rebecca Lively (md. James Addison Skaggs), Rufus (md. Malinda Williams), Elias (md. (1) Letha Ann Fleshman, md. (2) Mandana S. Canteberry), Levi (md. Adaline E. Stodghill), and Christopher (md. Matilda Margaret Thrasher). Joseph (also referred to as Joseph Jr. because of his uncle Joseph residing in the same area) was a farmer and resided on Hans Creek. Refer to Livelys of America (D4) for further information.
- *LOAMMI, b. 20 May 1791; d. 26 July 1858 on Brush Creek, Monroe Co.; bur. new Pack Cem., located on his farm on Brush Creek; md. JANE LIVELY. Jane, dau. of Cottrell Lively (1763) and wife Sarah Maddy (1773), was b. 10 Sep 1791 near Orchard, Monroe, W. Va.; d. 26 or 28 June 1863 at Brush Creek, Monroe, W. Va.; bur. new Pack Cem. Loammi was a farmer and resided on Brush Creek about 3 miles west of Lindside. Located on his farm were the Pack Methodist Church and the Pack School as well as the new Pack Cem. Refer to Family 56-57 for further details.
- WILLIAM, b. abt 1792-3; d. after 1850, prob. in Missouri; md. abt 1814 to CHLOE FARLEY. Chloe, dau. of Francis Farley and wife Rachel McMullin, was b. 1797 in now Summers Co.; prob. d. after 1860 in Missouri. Children (Pack): William (md. Jane and/or Elizabeth), Anderson (md. (1) Elizabeth, (2) Lucy J.), Juliann, Evi or Ivi (md. Elizabeth), Rachel, and one son and one daughter, both apparently dying in youth.

William paid personal property taxes in Giles Co. in 1816 and 1817 (B6), presumably residing for a few years after marriage on the west side of New River. However, by 1818 he had returned to the east side of New River where he and his wife Chloe of Monroe Co. conveyed to John Neely Chloe's undivided 1/3 interests in lands on waters of New River (east side) left by her deceased father Francis Farley (B2, F:430).

The William Pack family were recorded in the Monroe Co. census of 1820 (A12). William received from his parents on 17 Apr 1823 a tract of 74 acres off the upper (i.e. south) end of Samuel's home place (B2, H:12). Here William and his family continued to reside until moving to Raleigh Co. (then Giles Co.) where he is recorded in the 1830 census (A14) and was shown with a wife, five children, and one slave. By 1836 he had become a resident of John Henry Twp., Miller Co., Mo., where he was also recorded in the 1840 census (A24). The last known about him was that he was still living there in 1850 (A11).

William and Chloe's daughter Juliann died in Miller Co., Mo., when only about 18 years of age. In her will probated 7 Jan 1852, she made her mother Chloe her sole heir (B32, A:26); devised were a mill in Miller Co. on Humphrey's Creek designated as Pack's Mill, also her interests in the estate of her grandfather Samuel Pack, late of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.) By 1860 William's three sons were scattered over Missouri: William in Center Twp., Greene Co. (A25); Anderson in Central Twp., Franklin Co. (A26); and Ivi in

Jackson Twp., Osage Co. (A27). The "Caren" Pack (female, age 63, b. Va.) residing in Ivi's household in 1860 was probably his mother Chloe (Farley) Pack.

William added to his land holdings on the east side of New River when on 12 Dec 1826 he bought of Daniel Boardman and wife Hetty of New York City a tract of about 530 a. (B2, J:499); this tract in Monroe (now Summers) Co. was described as located near the junction of the Kanawha (sic New) River with Greenbrier River and adjoining a tract run out for Bartlet Pack. From the Boardman tract William Pack and Chloe of Fayette (now Raleigh) Co. conveyed to Isaac Woodram 440 a. including the Cales place (B2, K:442). By 1835 William Pack, Sr., was paying taxes on two tracts in Monroe Co.: 74 a. on New River adjoining Bartley Pack's heirs and 90 a. on New River Hill (B4).

On 16 Jan 1838 William and wife Chloe of Lincoln Co., Mo., gave power of attorney to James M. Ballengee of St. Louis Co., Mo., to sell their lands on New River near Pack's Ferry (sic. the upper ferry) (B2, L:625); and Ballengee then sold these two tracts to Anderson Pack of Monroe Co. (B2, L:626). In the latter conveyance the 74-acre tract was described as adjoining lands of Bartlet Pack's heirs and lands formerly owned by Francis Keatley, it being land on New River he had from his father Samuel Pack, deceased, and where William had formerly lived. Payments on these two tracts by Anderson Pack may have been delayed because William was still paying taxes on them in 1840 and 1845 (B4).

On 24 April 1833 William Pack bought of Alfred Beckley, the latter then in the U.S. Army, a tract of 930 a. at the headwaters of Big and Little Beaver in Fayette (now Raleigh) Co. (B28, A:340); and on 15 May 1833 he bought a second tract of 500 a. on Laurel Fork of Beaver a branch of Piney River in Fayette (now Raleigh) Co. from William Handley and wife Margarete (B28, A:333). These tracts may have been purchased merely for speculation because on 26 Sep 1834 William Pack of St. Louis Co., Mo., sold both tracts to Henry Hull (Jr.) (B28, A:439, 445). William having executed this deed without his wife signing, his wife Chloe Pack of Lincoln Co., Mo., conveyed her dowry interests in the 1263 a. to Henry Hull, Jr. (B31, A:248); conveyance of dowry was made on 16 Jan 1838 and was proved and recorded in Raleigh Co. on 26 Nov 1853.

ANDERSON, b. 27 Aug 1800; d. 4 Mar 1858 at his home at the mouth of Bluestone, Summers Co., W. Va.; prob. bur. old Pack Cem. or, as one tradition has it, on a mountain side west of his house (probably in reference to the Flatlands Cem. at the mouth of Bluestone); md. 5 May 1829 at Peterstown, Monroe, W. Va., to REBECCA SNIDOW PETERS. Rebecca S., dau. of Conrad Lewis Peters and wife Clara Snidow, was b. 14 Feb 1811 at Peterstown, Monroe, W. Va.; d. 12 Oct 1907 at Burden, Cowley, Kan.; bur. Burden. Children (Pack)--oldest children (probably first six) b. at Brush Creek, Monroe Co., remainder at mouth of Bluestone in Mercer (now Summers) Co.: Mary Jane (md. James E. Roles), Virginia (md. Dr. John Garfield Manser), Elizabeth Jane (md. Robert W. Saunders), Conrad Bartley (md. Minerva L. Pack), Clara Burk (md. Erastus Beckely Meador), Samuel Dickinson (md. Eliza Jane Tiffany), John Anderson (md. (1) Nannie P. Brown, md. (2) Mary Jane Skaggs), Allen Caperton (md. Allie Smith), Loammi Lewis (md. Ardelia Burke Wiley), Charles Henry (md. Louisa E. Skaggs), and Rebecca Catherine (d. infancy).

Anderson began paying personal property taxes in Monroe Co. in 1822 (B48) and became a wealthy landowner and merchant of Monroe

and later Mercer (now Summers) Co.; but only a brief sketch of his land holdings are given here. Anderson and Rebecca's first home was on Brush Creek; they were living with his father Samuel when the 1830 Census was taken (A4). Samuel's and later Anderson's home was located one mile west of Anderson's brother Loammi Pack's home; this was the site later of the home of James A. Campbell (D36). By his father Samuel's will dated 27 May 1833 (B3, 3:140), Anderson inherited his father's (last) home place on Brush Creek (225 a. plus an adjoining 50 a.), the 216-a. Miller place on Rich Creek, and Samuel's "outlands adjoining Peterstown" (containing 93 1/4 a.). Anderson paid taxes on these lands beginning in 1834 (B4).

On 27 Apr 1839 Anderson and wife Rebecca S. Pack sold to Delaney Swinney (all parties resident of Monroe Co.) the 216-a. Miller Place on Rich Creek now called Anderson Pack's still house place (B2, M:246). Sometime between 1835 and 1839, Anderson bought a large, 843 1/3 acre tract on Brush Creek from Spencer W. Elean and wife, and from this tract Anderson and wife Rebecca S. sold to James Meadows 100 acres off the north side on 27 Apr 1839 (B2, M:291). On 26 Apr 1838 Anderson Pack of Monroe Co. bought of Henry Hull (Jr.) and wife Emily of Fayette Co. a tract of 50 a. on Brush Creek (B2, M:16). This tract was described as part of 200 a. deeded by Samuel Pack, Jr. (son of old Samuel) to Henry Hull, Sr., and by him conveyed (i.e. the 50 a.) on 18 Apr 1822 to Henry Hull, Jr.; the 50-a. tract was located adjoining lands of Bartley Pack, Jr. (son of Loammi) and lands of Samuel Pack (Sr.), now belonging to Anderson Pack. While keeping ownership of his lands on Brush Creek in Monroe Co. and leaving 14 slaves to tend them (A1), Anderson moved down to New River about 1845.

Anderson's new home was established on the fertile Gatliff Bottom at the mouth of Bluestone River on the west side of New River, then in Mercer but now Summers Co., adjoining his brother Matt. This farm had been purchased on 27 Nov 1840 and 4 July 1843 for \$3300 from the administrators and heirs of Charles Gatliff, dec., a former resident of the New River area but lastly of Kentucky (B27, 1:329, 415). This farm consisted of two tracts of land totalling 470 a. One was a 150-acre survey of land dated 18 Aug 1785 and located on the southwest side of New River including an island in New River granted to Charles Gatliff on 2 Aug 1796; the other was a 320-acre survey of land dated 24 Aug 1785 at the mouth and on both sides of Bluestone River and on Pipestem Creek granted to Charles Gatliff on 30 July 1796. Others lands were subsequently purchased, and some sold, in present-day Summers and Mercer Co.

When an inventory of Anderson's Mercer Co. lands were taken on 13 Apr 1858, about one month following his death, the following tracts were listed (B15, 1:4): (1) 300 a. at the mouth of Bluestone [presumably the location of both Anderson's last farmstead and the Flatlands Cem.], (2) 150-acre Cook place, (3) 550 a. in Pipestem called the Alderson place, (4) 56 a. and 96 a. on Tallery Mtn., and (5) a tanyard (location not specified). Listed also in this inventory were personal property totalling \$41,345.60.

The will of Anderson Pack of Mercer Co. was dated 18 Feb 1858 and probated in Mercer Co. on 13 Apr 1858 (B15, 1:1); because of its involvement in Monroe Co. property also, it was proved by the Monroe Co. Court at its April 1858 term and a copy ordered to be recorded (B3, 7:41). In his will Anderson provided well for his

wife Rebecca S. in terms of personal property including slaves and life rights to land, including his "home plantation, where I now live." He gave his 550-acre Alderson place in the pipestems to his dau. Clara B.; his lands in Raleigh Co. were put in trust for the benefit of his daughter Elizabeth Jane Saunders. All of his lands in Monroe Co. he gave to his six sons, also the home farm and the Cook farm known as the Gatliff land. Disposition of several slaves was specified, some being emancipated if they so desired. Appointed executors were John R. Dunlap; and the will was witnessed by G. L. Jordan, J. T. Jordan, John Lane, and Joel Farley. An executor bond of \$10,000 was required, with Madison Karnes, Henry Karnes, Harris Robinson, Archibald Pack, George W. Pearis, James W. Bailey, and Elliott Vawter as securities.

Birth dates of all of Anderson and Rebecca's children are provided in the Peters-Snidow history (D32) except for Mary Jane, of whom no mention is made. Yet, abundant evidence leads to the conclusion that Mary Jane was, in fact, their eldest daughter. Mary Jane was included as the third entry in Anderson's household in 1850 (A16), following Anderson and Rebecca; James Roles (age 27, b. Va.) was listed lastly in the household. Although not documented in his will as being a daughter, Mary Jane Roles was devised a negro slave Mary; also, the remainder of the estate after all specific legacies had been met was to be sold and the proceeds distributed in equal fourth parts to Mary Jane Roles along with Virginia Manser, Clara B. Pack, and Elizabeth J. Saunders. James Roles (by 1858 having become her husband) was mentioned in the will as having special lease arrangements on Anderson's lands in Monroe Co. as well as being appointed one of the executors.

Providing his wife was unable "to control my sons," Anderson's will gave his executors the power to rent out his land and hire out his negroes, until his youngest son became 21 years of age. He also specified that if his son Conrad B. Pack should marry Miss Lee Saunders (sister of Robert W. Saunders) he was to receive a young bay horse, saddle, and bridle and nothing more. Following Anderson's death, his widow moved back to Monroe Co., where she was recorded in the 1860 Census (A5) owning real estate valued at \$24,000 and personal property valued at \$15,198.

JANE (JENNIE or JENNET), b. 1801; d. after 1860, prob. in Lincoln Co., Mo.; md. (1) 7 July 1815 (date of bond) to DANIEL BROYLES. Daniel, son of Peter Broyles and wife Elizabeth Blankenbaker, was b. 17 Nov 1779 prob. in W. Va.; d. prior 22 Aug 1823 (date of inventory). Children (Broyles)--b. Monroe Co.: Betsy, Augustus (md. Harriet Thomason), Milton (md. Martha Ann Thomason), and Samuel (md. Elizabeth Jane Hines). Jane md. (2) 2 Aug 1823 in Monroe Co. to JONAH MORRIS. Jonah, son of Israel Morris and wife Hannah, was b. 1802 in W. Va.; d. 1867 in Lincoln Co., Mo. Children (Morris)--first four b. in Monroe Co., remainder in Lincoln Co., Mo.: Polly (md. Albis H. East), James (md. Clarinda), Hannah (md. Felix or Reuben Raney), Jacob, Virginia (md. Joseph W. Rush), Angeline (md. George C. McCullum), Israel (md. Cary Ann Womack), and Henry H. (md. Sarah E.).

Daniel Broyles and wife Jane resided near Lindside where Daniel died in 1823. An inventory of his personal property was taken on 22 Aug 1823; at his estate sale buyers included Joness Morris, Anderson Pack, Samuel Pack, Sr., and Jacob Dickason (B3, 2:188, 209, 304). After her marriage to Jonah Morris, the family remained in Monroe Co. until about 1835 when they moved to Lincoln Co., Mo., where the Jonah Morris family are recorded in the 1840,

1850, and 1860 censuses (A29, A15, A28). In his will dated 30 Mar 1867 and probated 6 June 1867 in Lincoln Co., Jonah left a life right in his home place including the dwelling house to his wife Jane and named their eight children (B33, 3:37).

A list--this apparently taken from a family Bible--of the older children of Samuel Pack and wife Mary Farley was found amongst Pack descendants on New River about 1938 (D21). This list was "evidently written in the early 1790's, the presumption being that it was written just after the birth of Loammi on 20 May 1791, as the list does not include William, Anderson, and Jennie, the younger children of this union. We, having seen the writing of the older Samuel Pack, believe this list to have been written by him in his own handwriting." (Verification statement was made by Aubrey O. Smith.) However, all of the 10 children are documented in Samuel's will (B3, 3:140).

Even though William was given as aged 59 years when listed in the 1850 census (A11), there is no family tradition that he was a twin of Loammi born 20 May 1791. Since Loammi was the youngest child recorded in the partial family record noted above (D21) and William was not included, it appears he was younger than Loammi and probably born in 1792 or 1793. Also, while Loammi began paying personal property taxes in Monroe Co. in 1812 at age 21, William did not begin until 1814, thus suggesting 1793 as his year of birth (B48). (Note: the following section is a revision of a synthesis entitled "The Samuel Pack Family" (D26).)

Based on his being aged 70 to 80 years of age at the time of the 1830 census (A4), Samuel would have been born between 1750 and 1760. His eldest son John being born on 22 Nov 1777 suggests Samuel's birth may have taken place about 1755, and this year is considered the best approximation for his birth. His reported place of birth being in Augusta Co., Va., this probably correct, still leaves uncertainty whether Augusta Co., Va., of today is meant or Augusta Co. as it existed around 1755--at that time actually including much of the western Virginia valleys and all of West Virginia and Kentucky. In his later years Samuel (1755) often referred to himself as Samuel, Sr., undoubtedly to distinguish himself from his son Samuel, Jr.

New River Geography. Samuel Pack (1755) spent his entire adult life in the New River area of southern West Virginia. (Refer to the accompanying map entitled "Pack's New River Country".) The New River originates in northwestern North Carolina, flows northerly across western Virginia, and crosses into West Virginia shortly after it cuts through the last ridge of the Appalachian Mountains at the Narrows in now Giles Co., Va. From thence it flows northwesterly across West Virginia--a unique direction for a major U.S. river. From its junction with the Gauley River until it enters the Ohio River at Point Pleasant--the place of the great Indian battle of 1774--it is called the Great Kanawha River.

The Samuel Pack family during the last quarter of the 18th century and the first quarter of the 19th century was mostly confined to an area on both sides of New River in present-day Summers Co. extending from the mouth of Greenbrier River up New River about 10 miles to Bull Falls (the locale of Fort Farley and later Warford). Also of prominence for this early Pack family was the adjoining area of southwestern Monroe Co., W. Va., on Rich and Brush Creeks and the Island Creek area of now Mercer Co. Being in the forefront of settlement of the area, Samuel Pack (1755) and his sons were able to block out substantial land holdings along New River in what was then Virginia but now southern West Virginia. However, beginning about 1820, the second and third generation Packs and other allied pioneer families on New River began taking up extensive land tracts further north and west, principally in Raleigh, Fayette, and Boone counties.

The upper (southern) New River area of West Virginia consists of steep, rough, low mountain country that is dissected from south to north by the New River gorge, which confines the river to a narrow channel. Arable soil was confined mostly to the narrow "bottoms" along New River, its several islands, and at the mouths of its major tributaries, namely Rich Creek, Brush Creek, Indian Creek, and Greenbrier River on the east side and Island Creek, Bluestone River, and Leatherwood Creek on the west side. More extensive arable lands were located on the flat to rolling tops of the adjacent high ridges. Originally there were shallows in New River that could be forded in low water periods or in most other times of emergency; ferries were placed at several strategic points beginning in 1812. Because of the narrow channel and the large area New River drained, the bottoms were sometimes flooded by high water and losses of personal property was often severe; but in most years the bottoms produced high yields of crops and livestock.

The functional geography of the area was drastically changed in 1952 when the Bluestone Dam was completed across New River south of Hinton, and the Bluestone Reservoir began filling to capacity. All of the ferries and fords crossing New River above Hinton were removed and the lands in the New River bottoms including about 200 of the oldest and best bottomland farms were bought up by the U.S. government following condemnation. All buildings and farmsteads considered as being in the possible floodplain were razed, and attempts were made to reinter the graves in the several family cemeteries elsewhere. The previous historic community was virtually destroyed and the New River bottoms including its many Pack historical sites now lie mostly buried under Bluestone Reservoir.


For a period of nearly one hundred years (1772-1871), the upper New River also was a political boundary, i.e. a county line. Both sides of the river were in Augusta Co., Va., from 1738 to 1769, when Botetourt Co. was created. The west side of the river was included in Fincastle Co. beginning in 1772, in Montgomery Co. in 1776, in Giles Co. in 1806, and in Mercer Co. in 1837. The east side of the river remained in Botetourt Co. until 1777, when Greenbrier Co. was created, but area south of the mouth of Greenbrier River became Monroe Co. upon its creation in 1799. Finally both sides of the river were united politically in 1871 when Summers Co. was created, an original West Virginia county. A further political complication locally was that Fincastle Co. (later abolished) and then Montgomery Co. also claimed the land adjoining New River on the east bank and south of Greenbrier River until 1779. This maze of courthouse jurisdictions greatly complicates searching out the histories of the early upper New River families.

Early Settlement. Attempts to settle the upper New River area of West Virginia began about 1750 but was virtually stymied by fierce attacks by Indians of the Shawnee and allied tribes. The Indians were largely successful in keeping the white settlers out of the area until 1772-4, just prior to the Revolutionary War. Until about 1795 continuous mountain warfare with the Indians was a way of life for the Packs and their neighbors. Families protected themselves the best they could, since not always were the local county militias available to protect them. Although many families of the times lost members to killing or kidnapping by the Indians, the Packs were fortunate in coming through this difficult period with no recorded casualties by Indians. The early New River settlers both hated and feared the Indians, and this all with ample cause.

The first documented attempt to settle on New River between the Narrows and present-day Hinton was made in 1754-5 by Andrew Culbertson of Pennsylvania on a bottom on the west side of New River at and above Bull Falls (D5, D21, D24). However, fear of Indian attacks forced him from the area shortly afterwards, and the claim remained mostly unoccupied until 1775 when taken up by Thomas Farlow (sic Farley), a brother-in-law of Samuel Pack. During his brief ownership of this tract of land (generally known as Culbertson's bottom

PACK'S NEW RIVER COUNTRY

W. Va.

 Culbertson or Farley or Crump's Bottom

Residences + Lands

- A Samuel Pack (land and probable first residence)
- B John Pack place (Estill Bottom)
- C Mathew Pack place
- D Samuel Pack (home place) Bartley Pack place (later)
- E Wm. Pack place (until 1834)
- F Anderson Pack (later home)
- G Wm. Pack Jr place (son of Samuel Jr.)
- H Samuel Pack (last home) Loammi Pack place Pack M.E. ch. Samuel Pack Jr. place (until about 1815) Anderson Pack (first place)
- I Joseph Lively Jr. place
- J Jacob Dickason place
- K Daniel Broyles place
- L Cottrell Lively place
- M Thomas Farley fort and early residence
- N Francis Farley place
- O Matthew Farley place (last home of Francis Farley Sr. and wife)
- P John Farley place

Scale 1" = 4 mi.



Forts (for protection from Indians)

- F1 Fort Farley
- F2 Fort Culbertson (or Fields Ft.)
- F3 Cook's Fort
- F4 Wood's Fort

but later as Crump's bottom), Thomas Farley built Fort Farley. It was at Fort Farley that Thomas Farley's half sister Mary met and soon married Samuel Pack. Located near the fort was War Ford (sic Warford), a place where the pioneers in war times could cross the river back and forth, the crossing being difficult but possible except during flood times.

Military Records. Besides Ft. Farley mentioned above, three other forts were constructed in the area. Fort Culbertson was constructed in 1774 near the center of Culbertson's Bottom at the mouth of Joshua Creek by Capt. James Robertson by order of William Preston, lieutenant colonel of the Fincastle Co. Militia. This fort was sometimes referred to as Field's Fort, and there are unverified reports that suggest the Virginia Colony may have put fortifications here against the Indians in 1755, when a series of forts were being placed along the Appalachians. Wood's fort was built by Capt. Michael Wood on Rich Creek in 1773. Cook's Fort built by Valentine Cook, was also a family fort made available to neighbors; it was built in the early 1770's on Indian Creek about three miles above New River. Both Wood's Fort and Cook's Fort were located on the east side of New River. Indian depredations on New River began with renewed earnest in 1774, several people were injured or killed by Indians, and the few remaining settlers were kept retreating into the forts for protection.

Two military letters pertaining to the Fincastle Co. Militia provide the first documentation of Samuel Pack (1755) on New River (D23). In a letter from Michael Woods to Col. William Preston dated 29 May 1774, he listed 30 men residing "in that bounds from Rich Creek Mountain to where the county line strikes the River," i.e. on the east side of New River and south of the Greenbrier River in that area claimed by Fincastle Co. The letter continues, "Also, there is a few men that lives in a string on the other side of the river (i.e. the west side) that ever will be inconvenient to any other place to muster at for they would not have above 7 to 8 miles to muster here; and if they must go elsewhere they most of them must go 15 or 20 miles to muster and the names of these is Charles Cavanaugh, Philimon Cavanaugh, James Odear, Wm. Canvanough, Senr., Samuel Pack, George Pack, Charles Hays, Thos. Farlor, Francis Farlor, John Farlor, Mitchle Clay, and some others that I do not know their names."

"Also, I must acquaint you that the most of these men is bad off for arms and ammunition and I believe cannot get them." In a joint letter from Michael Woods and James Robertson (captains) to Col. Wm. Preston written from Rich Creek on 16 Sep 1774, they further reported: "I draughted Phillip Cavanaugh, John Farley, Richard Blankinship, John Umphres, Francis Farley, and George Pack who all refused" (D23). The letter further stated that John Farlen had been serving as a scout. However, these refusals appear to have been only temporary and arose from their fear of leaving their families unprotected against Indian attack.

Events were leading up to the fateful day of 10 Oct 1774, on which day occurred the Battle of Point Pleasant, in which the county regiments (militia) of Augusta, Botetourt, and Fincastle Co. and certain other Virginia units fought a pitched battle with the warriors of several tribes under the leadership of the Shawnee chief Cornstalk. At this battle, which occurred at the point of land at the confluence of the Kanawha and Ohio Rivers, 53 Americans were killed and 87 were wounded. Because of apparent British and Tory support of the Indians leading up to this battle, it is considered by such organizations as the Daughters of the American Revolution and several prominent historians as the first battle of the Revolutionary War, this being two years prior to the battles of Concord and Lexington (D16, D20, D23).

In her semi-official book on the Battle of Point Pleasant, also referred to as Lord Dunmore's War, Poffenbarger (D20) lists George and Samuel Pack and Francis, John, and Thomas Farley (i.e. three Farley brothers) as privates in

the battle. Credited for service in Capt. James Robertson's Co. of the Fincastle Co. Militia in 1774 (D14) were Charles Gatliff (38 days), Francis Farler (26 days), George Pack (22 days), and Samuel Pack (22 days). These time periods may have included their services at the Battle of Point Pleasant. Kegley (D14) also included an account which named George Pack and Samuel Pack as each receiving payment for provisions for one man for five days.

Probably because of daily necessity as well as patriotism, Samuel Pack's military service did not end at the Battle of Point Pleasant. When the Montgomery Co. militia was organized in 1777, both Samuel and George Pack were included on Col. James Robertson's list (D15). Samuel Pack took the oath of allegiance to the U.S. on 11 Oct 1777; his apparent brother George Pack on 13 Oct 1777 (D49, p. 46-7). Samuel Pack and George Pack were each credited by the Greenbrier Co. Court on 19 June 1782 as furnishing 234 rations during the Revolutionary War (B25). On a pay abstract of Hugh Caperton's Co. dated 12 Dec 1791, Samuel Pack received payment for \$43 as a private for 7 months and 24 days beginning 4 Apr 1792 (D21). In later years Rebecca Peters Pack, wife of Anderson Pack, recalled her father-in-law, Samuel Pack, along with Charles Gatliff and William Wiley, who she understood as Indian spies and scouts, meeting at her home and talking over their experiences in Indian warfare (D5). Because of their Revolutionary War services as privates, descendants of Samuel Pack and George Pack (as well as Thomas and Francis Farley) are eligible for membership in patriotic societies such as Daughters of the American Revolution (D9, D10).

Pack Lands on New River. Following their marriage about 1776, reportedly as well as probably at Fort Farley, Samuel Pack and Mary Farley may have lived on Culbertson's Bottom until Thomas Farley sold the Bottom in 1778. It is family tradition that Samuel Pack and family, after being attacked by Indians, fled from one of the forts on New River (probably Fort Farley) in danger of being overrun (D18). The story continues that they went first to Cook's Fort below Greenville, Monroe Co., but then on to Wood's Fort on Rich Creek. It was apparently while at Wood's Fort that Samuel Pack became acquainted with the Lively family and the lands on Brush and Rich Creek that he later purchased; the later Pack farm on Brush Creek was located about two miles west of Wood's Fort.

On 13 Dec 1784 Samuel Pack had a survey made for 228 a. on Island Creek, then in Montgomery Co. (B8, D:84). This survey was made to him by virtue of an entry on a certificate from the commissioners of Washington and Montgomery Co. for 300 a. dated 5 Sep 1782. This tract lay on the west side of New River along the present Summers-Mercer county line about six air miles south of Fort Farley, possibly twice that far by water. Samuel and family may have lived on this tract for a few years, or possibly George Pack rented it from him and lived there. When the patent on the Island Creek tract was made to Samuel Pack on 24 June 1790 (B7, 22:352), it was awarded by virtue of a certificate in right of settlement. It was not until 1 Oct 1804 that Samuel Pack and wife Mary of Monroe Co. sold the Island Creek land to Andrew Willson of Montgomery Co., Va. (B9, D:148). Since Samuel paid taxes on this 228 a. only from 1790 through 1795, transfer of this tract must have begun several years prior to 1804 (B19). Samuel Pack was issued another survey for 80 a. on Island Creek on 26 May 1783 (B8, D:86), but no subsequent grant to Samuel or sale of this land by him has been found suggesting he had assigned his interests to another party.

Estill's Bottom, located on the east side of New River and extending along New River from opposite the mouth of Bluestone River to opposite the mouth of Leatherwood Creek, was the next home of Samuel Pack, probably as early as 1787. A survey of this 106-a. tract was made for him on 3 Dec 1787, as an assignee of John Estill (B10, 2:37). Because no conveyance had yet been made of this tract "where Samuel Pack lives" to the Pack Family, Wallis Estill of Madison Co., Ky., attorney for Bond Estill of the same place, heir of John

Estill, deceased, gave power of attorney to Isaac Estill to make such conveyance (B2, B:505). However, when the deed was made on 19 Apr 1808, Samuel Pack had it made over to his oldest son John Pack, and this tract subsequently became known as the John Pack place (B2, B:506). Taxlists reveal that Samuel never paid taxes prior to 1799 on Monroe Co. lands while still a part of Greenbrier Co. (B20). He also did not pay taxes on the 106 a. during the 1799-1805 period although he had begun paying personal property taxes in Monroe Co. in 1799 (B48); possibly the Estill family paid the land taxes until John Pack as "assignee of Estele" (sic Estill) began paying the taxes in 1806 (B26).

In the meantime Samuel Pack on 17 June 1800 purchased the bottom immediately above (i.e. south) of Estill Bottom from James Ellison and wife Elizabeth for L300 (B2, A:56). This 223-a. tract, lying on the east side of New River, extended along the bottom from opposite the mouth of Bluestone up New River for about two miles. This tract is often referred to as the Samuel Pack home place. Samuel moved his family there shortly after its purchase, built his mansion house there, and lived there until after the death of his wife Mary. On a low elevation above the original high water line and not far from his mansion house, Samuel laid out the old Pack Cem., where both he and his wife and a number of his descendants were buried.

The home place was eventually divided between Samuel's sons Bartley and William, the former receiving the lower end and William the upper end. On 17 Apr 1823 Samuel Pack and wife Mary sold 74 a. off the upper (i.e. south) end of the bottom to their son William (B2, H:12). (Note: this 1823 deed is the last known recording for Mary, and it is presumed she died between 1823 and 1830 since she was not recorded in Samuel's household in 1830 (A12).) Here William and his family resided until shortly after his father's death in 1833. The boundary line between William and Bartley's divisions was a branch on which Samuel and later Bartley had a still house. Near this still house Samuel's daughter Betsy and husband Jacob Dickason lived for a time--without owning--before moving up to the valley of Peter's Mountain.

Title to the lower, 149-a. portion of the home tract was not conveyed to son Bartley until July 1833 through the probaton of Samuel's will (B3, 3:140), less than a year prior to Bartley's death. However, Bartley and his family had lived there for many years. It was on this portion of the home place that the mansion house, the old Pack Cemetery, and the upper Pack Ferry were located, the latter two items being specified in Samuel's will. It was here that Packs Ferry P.O., established by Grandison C. Landcraft, a son-in-law of Bartley Pack, functioned from 1841 to 1924 (D27, 18:298).

The Samuel Pack home site and cemetery site now lie within the Bluestone Reservoir reservation and are partly or fully under water. It is concluded that the Samuel Pack family cemetery was the same as the one known later as the Hayes Cemetery, located on the east side of New River about one mile above the mouth of Bluestone. Joseph N. Haynes, who married a great granddaughter of Samuel Pack (1755), later owned the original Pack ferry and the land on which was located the Hayes Cemetery. During the late 1940's the U.S Army Corps of Engineers removed all graves of known location from the Hayes Cemetery and about two dozen other cemeteries along New River south of Hinton, W. Va. All 99 graves found in the Hayes cemetery, many recorded only as unknown, were relocated to the Greenbrier Cemetery and Indian Mills Cemetery. The known burials in Hayes Cemetery included Bartlet Pack and several of his descendants. Since the graves of Samuel Pack and wife Mary remained unidentified through the Bluestone relocation program, it is uncertain whether their remains went undiscovered and left in place or were reinterred elsewhere and numbered among the "unknown."

According to A New River Heritage, by Saunders (D50, 3:125), "The fever for flood control and possible power generation overwhelmed any idea of

respect or preservation of history of all the family homesites and graveyards." "Readable stones in the old graveyards were removed to these new locations, while other, cruder stones, were cast aside and small metal markers on spikes were stuck in the ground of the other relocated graves, known and unknown. A couple of shovels full of black dirt, representing mortal remains, together with bones, belt buckles or other metal objects, were dug up and placed in three foot long by one foot deep boxes and relocated to other principle high ground cemeteries" (D50, 3:126).

"An even better example of the ancient cemetery mutilation exists in what, apparently, was a principal Pack slave graveyard, with Pack family and relatives also burying there, in a cemetery called the Flatfield Cemetery." This cemetery was located between Pipestem Creek and the mouth of Bluestone on New River on a beautiful bench point of land at the northern end of River Ridge. This cemetery, further described as being near the westside ferry landing, "may have also contained the home of Matthew Pack" (D50, 3:124). Since many of the grave sites subjected to relocation yet remain above the highest water level, many graves were probably never discovered, and the cemetery sites were mostly changed into debris-laden, battlefield-like terrain, Sanders concluded: "These graves would have been better left where they were and the tremendous expense of the so-called removal not charged to the taxpayers" (D50, 3:83).

Another important land transaction--this including the site of the later Flatfield Cemetery--was made on New River by Samuel on what was known as the "Gatliff Bottom." On 1 June 1795 he received a survey for this 135-a. tract, which extended from the mouth of Bluestone across the mouth of Pipestem and up (south) the west bank of New River in a narrow band for about 2 1/2 miles (B11, E:192). A patent on this tract was granted to Samuel on 21 June 1795 (B7, 32:269). This tract was willed by Samuel to his son Matthew and remained the Matt Pack home place until after the latter's death. Samuel Pack was still paying the taxes on this 135-acre property in 1815, when Matt Pack was recorded as the tenant (B21).

Two surveys on the ridge east of New River were issued to Samuel Pack on 12 Oct 1796. The first survey of 50 a. was described as being on the north side of New River Ridge between where said Pack now lives and Estill's bottom and opposite the mouth of Bluestone (B16, 2:444). When a grant to Samuel on this tract was made on 15 Jan 1799, the land was also described as being on the north side of New River on the top of the River Ridge between where said Pack now lives and Estill's Bottom and adjoining Turkey Cock Hollow (B17, 4:268). This 50-acre tract was conveyed by Samuel Pack, Sr., to Barkly (sic Bartly) Pack on 16 Apr 1811 (B2, C:239). The second tract surveyed on 13 Oct 1796 was for 70 a. and was described as being located on the top of River Ridge below the mouth of Indian Creek adjoining Henry Banks and John Farlor (B16, 2:444).

Roads and Pack Ferries. Roads along New River and between New River and the headwaters of Rich Creek were always important to the Packs. Early-day roads were constructed on gentle terrain along New River and on the bench-like ridges whenever possible. The Monroe Co. Court on 18 Feb 1800 directed Samuel Pack, John Farley, and Matt Farley to view (sic survey) the nearest and best way from William Laferty's (i.e. mouth of Indian Creek) to the crossing ford of New River near the mouth of Bluestone (B12); and shortly thereafter these three confirmed that they had viewed and marked a wagon road as directed. On 17 June 1800 the Monroe Co. Court recorded Samuel Pack as being the surveyor of the road from his house (i.e. near mouth of Bluestone) to Indian Creek (B12); the court also ordered tithables living below the head of "this bottom" (i.e. Estill's) to the county line (presumably Monroe-Greenbrier county line) to work on said road. This road was important in connecting up the residences of the Farleys and Packs along the east side of New River.

However, not all road plans were welcomed by the local citizenry; after some residents had petitioned to have a road built from Botetourt Co. through Monroe Co. to be paid from new taxes, many inhabitants of Greenbrier Co. south of Greenbrier River including Samuel Pack, George Parks (sic Pack), Matt Farley, Francis Farley, and John Farlor (sic Farley) on 20 Nov 1781 petitioned to oppose such a road based on many of the frontier families being destitute and could not afford such a road building project (D27, 2:102-104).

Samuel's 135-a. tract on the west side of New River provided the west bank landing for the old Pack ferry. In willing this tract to his son Matthew, Samuel specified that son Bartley, who had been willed the ferry and landings on both sides of the river, was to have a boat landing constantly kept on this tract (B3, 3:140). One 19 June 1812 Samuel Pack applied in Monroe Co. to keep a ferry "where the public road from Union Town in this county to the mouth of Blue Stone River in the county of Giles crosses the said New River" (B12). Permission to build the ferry at the mouth of Bluestone was granted on 15 Aug 1812, and rates were set at 6 1/4 cents for each horse, mule, cattle, person, wheel or carriage.

This ferry was operated into the 1900's, undoubtedly firstly by Samuel and then by his son Bartley and his family, then by Bartley's son-in-law Grandison C. Landcraft, and lastly by James N. Haynes, a nephew by marriage of Landcraft. Samuel Pack was granted permission on 20 July 1813 to keep an ordinary (inn) (B13), and presumably this was located near the ferry landing on the east side of the river. Sanders (D50) credits the old Pack ferry across New River along with the intersection of road connections at the site as comprising a hub center of major early-day commercial activity.

There were, in fact, three ferries being operated by the Pack family across New River during the 1800's. Besides the "upper" Pack Ferry (later Landcraft's and then Haynes'), descendants of William Pack, Jr. (son of Samuel Jr. of Samuel (1755)) were operating the ferry known as the Meadow's Ferry at the mouth of Greenbrier River on 23 May 1878 (B14, 2:118). A Pack ferry, sometimes referred to as the lower Pack Ferry, was operating in the 1880's from a landing above the mouth of Leatherwood on the former John Pack place, then owned by his son Rufus. This ferry had been operating, apparently since at least 1871, when Rufus Pack was granted a license to keep there a "house of private entertainment," presumably an inn.

There is some question as to which was the original Pack Ferry, the lower ferry above the mouth of Leatherwood or the upper ferry above the mouth of Bluestone River (D21). However, it is concluded that the upper (south) ferry was the original one based on the following: (1) the original application of 1812 located the site as being at the mouth of Bluestone where Samuel owned the lands on both sides, (2) this combination only meets the general location of the upper ferry, (3) deeds and Samuel's will of the 1830's specified the ferry boat landings as being here, and (4) the site of the later lower ferry had been transferred to John Pack in 1808 with no subsequent records revealing that John himself ever owned or operated a ferry. Miller (D5) is considered correct in stating, "The first ferry established in the county (i.e. Summers Co.) was Pack's Ferry across New River by the Packs, opposite the old Landcraft residence (formerly Samuel Pack's residence). It remained there until ten years ago, when, by an order of the county court, it was removed down the river near the mouth of Big Bluestone by Mr. J. N. Haynes," this removal apparently a very short distance and possibly to align up better with intersecting roads.

The Brush and Rich Creek Lands. The second center of Pack settlement was located at the heads of Brush and Rich Creek in present-day Monroe Co., approximately 15 air miles southeast of the mouth of Bluestone. Here Samuel's son Loammi made permanent settlement and Samuel's sons Samuel, Jr., and

Anderson resided for a time after their marriages. Also, here was located the last home of Samuel Pack (1755).

On 20 Aug 1799 Samuel purchased from John Hutchison and wife a tract of 400 a. (surveyed 6 June 1785 and patented 4 Aug 1788 to Hutchison) and an adjoining 50 a. (surveyed 9 Feb 1791 for Hutchison) (B2, A:17, 18); these tracts were located on Brush Creek bounded by Joshua's Ridge and lands of Andrew Wilson and Henry Banks. This combined tract of 450 acres was later divided between sons Loammi and Anderson. On 17 Apr 1823 Samuel and wife Mary deeded the upper (eastern) 225 a. to their son Loammi (B2, H:31). This tract was described as "commencing on my back line in the Lick hollow and down said hollow with the meanders of the branch to Brush Creek and down the same to the mouth of the right hand branch at the mouth of my land thence up said branch to the first right hand fork thence up the right hand fork to the line near Coterall Lively's fence and with the same to the beginning." This tract conveyed to Loammi became the nucleus of the Loammi Pack place, and here was located the Pack M.E. Church built at least by 1841 and the Pack school. Also, located on the Loammi Pack Farm was the new Pack Cemetery on a prominence on the south side of the Brush Creek meadows.

The lower half of the Brush Creek property bought from Hutchison was kept by Samuel Pack until his death. To this was added a 60-acre tract received by grant in 1804 based on a survey to him made 2 Aug 1802 (B18, 1:71); it was described as being on Joshua's Ridge waters of Brush Creek and adjoining land bought of John Hutchison and land of Andrew Wilson. On his remaining Brush Creek lands (i.e. not sold to son Loammi) Samuel was residing at the time of his death, devising this "home place" to his youngest son Anderson (B3, 3:140). Here Anderson resided for a few years, until he bought land at the mouth of Bluestone adjoining Matt Pack's place and moved his family there. Census records show that Samuel's household in 1830 consisted of a male aged 70-80 years (himself), a male aged 20-30 years (his son Anderson), and a female aged 15-20 years (Rebecca, new wife of Anderson) (A4). It is uncertain just when Samuel moved to Rich Creek. Although it is presumed Samuel did not make Rich Creek his primary residence until after the death of his wife, it is possible he had constructed a residence there in earlier years and they resided there part time.

Additional lands were added to Samuel's holdings on 17 Apr 1823, when he bought the Joseph Miller tract of 216 a. on Rich Creek adjoining his Brush Creek property from Hugh Caperton and wife Jane and Henry Alexander and wife Elizabeth (B2, G:477). Samuel's home place on Brush Creek was willed to Anderson in exchange for Anderson conveying his Hulls tract to Loammi's son Bartley (B3, 3:140). Rounding out his purchase of Brush and Rich Creek lands, Samuel and his son John made a joint land investment on 2 May 1821, when they bought from Christian Peters and wife Catherine four acres comprising Peterstown town lots, 220 a. on the east side of Peterstown between Brush and Rich Creeks, and 165 a. on the west side of town (B2, G:395). These tracts were variously divided amongst the heirs of John and Samuel after their respective deaths.

The foregoing discussions include all of the lands owned by Samuel Pack (1755) except lands referred to in his will as being in Ohio, of uncertain location. By deed and by will, Samuel conveyed lands to sons John, Matthew, Bartley, Loammi, William, and Anderson and undoubtedly financed Samuel, Jr., initially with his land purchases. Reference to the land taxes of Monroe Co. (B4) aid in summarizing Samuel's lands in 1827 and in 1834 (as devisor in 1834) (B4):

- 1827: 223 a. on New River adj. John Pack (with Wm. Pack)
- 450 a. on Brush Cr. adj. Cottrell Lively (with Loammi Pack)
- 60 a. on Brush Cr. adj. his own land
- 216 a. on Rich Creek adj. Joe Miller (i.e. the Miller tract)

4 a., 161 a., and 220 a. near Peterstown (with John Pack's heirs)

1834: 149 a. adj. John Pack's heirs (to Bartlet Pack's heirs)
 74 a. on New River adj. Bartlet Pack's heirs (to William Pack)
 225 a. and 60 a. on Brush Creek (to Anderson Pack)
 22 a. and 124 a. on Rich Creek (to Anderson Pack).

The 1835 taxlist showed there were still 161 a. near Peterstown jointly owned by the heirs of Samuel Pack and the heirs of his son John.

The Southern Tradition. The West Virginia Packs were very much a Southern family in being Methodists and Baptists, plantation owners, slave owners, having a strong land ethic, and being totally supportive of the Confederacy during and long after the Civil War. The upper New River counties quickly seceded from the Union at the outbreak of the Civil War and refused to affiliate with the rest of West Virginia until forced to after the war had ended. Several of the third and fourth generation Packs served in the Confederate forces during the war. Grandison Landcraft, a vocal supporter of the Union cause, found out just how ardent the Pack sympathies were. He quickly found himself lodged in the local jail at the instigation of his Pack in-laws, where he reportedly spent the remainder of the war.

Census records reveal that Samuel Pack owned 11 slaves in 1820, while his sons John and Samuel, Jr., owned two each (A12). In 1830 Samuel still owned 11 slaves, his son Loammi owned one slave, his son Bartley two slaves, his son John's widow four slaves, and his son Samuel, Jr., eight slaves (A4). The slave schedules for the 1850 census show his grandson Rufus Pack owning six slaves in Monroe Co. (A1) and his grandson Archibald Pack owning four slaves in Mercer Co. (A16).

Family tradition is that Samuel's son Anderson was the largest slave owner in the family, owning as many as 150 but whether on a single given date or through his lifetime is not indicated (D1); but these reports were probably greatly inflated. During the late 1840's Anderson paid personal property taxes on the following number of slaves (aged 16 and over) in Monroe Co.: 13 in 1845, 9 in 1846, and 8 in 1847 and 1848 (B48). While paying taxes on only 5 slaves in 1850 in Monroe Co., the slave schedules for the 1850 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.), show him owning 14 slaves in that county (A1); and the 1850 census of Mercer Co. records him owning 21 slaves in that county (A16). His will dated 18 Feb 1858 (B3, 7:41) refers to nine slaves by names but reveals there were others; an inventory of his estate made in 1858 included a total of 27 slaves amongst his personal property (B15).

A complete study of the Pack slaves and their families would be interesting but has not been made here. However, it does appear that they were generally well treated while being considered as valuable chattel property, were permitted to continue family relationships generally, and were often specially provided for in the Pack wills. Prior to distribution of slaves from the estate of Samuel's son John, it was mutually agreed by John's children that Shady and her seven children should not be sold outside the family but remain in the possession of said distributees (B3, 4:469). The favored slaves were apparently treated by the Pack owners with much the same consideration as their own children but were expected to do their work. After being freed, most of the Pack slaves took the Pack surname, and many stayed on with the white Pack families for many years, going about their lives much as they had before being legally freed. Pack lands were commonly rented to the former slaves and, in some cases, gifted outright to them, as in the case of Betsy Pack and her husband Jacob Dickason.

Samuel Pack in his will gave numerous instructions as to his 19 slaves (B3, 3:140), giving directions as to their disposition and care. Samuel

directed that his son Bartlet was to "take charge of old Abram and Fanney his wife and to let them remain on said (land) during their natural life;" it is assumed old Abraham had been his personal companion and that Abraham's wife Fanny had been the personal attendant of his wife Mary and probably the nanny to their children. It does appear that some (possibly most or even all) of the other slaves owned by Samuel were descendants of Abraham and Fanny.

When Samuel devised "my negro woman Amey" to sons Anderson and Bartlett, he requested that "they will grant her more than usual privileges and treat her well for her kindness to myself and worthy companion that has gone before me." By his will Samuel also transferred ownership of "one yellow boy Harris" (a mulatto aged 25 years in 1850) from son Anderson to son Loammi. Harris being a mulatto, i.e. one parent white and the other negro, leads to the speculation that a white Pack male may have been his father. The family tradition has been duly noted that Samuel did enjoy sharing the fruits of his still with his young "pickaninnies" that they might be induced to dance and caper even more, much to his delight (D19).

Johnston (D13) records an interesting observation made by a grand daughter of Samuel Pack (1755) about him: "Mrs. Emily Landgraff (sic Landcraft), who lived near Pack's Ferry, said that she had seen her grandfather, Samuel Pack, the first Samuel (i.e. in contrast to his son Samuel, Jr.), and that he was an old gentleman of the English type, who dressed in the frock coat and knee breeches peculiar to the eighteenth century and that he wore a cue" (sic. braid of hair). This is probably a reliable report since Emily Pack Landcraft, dau. of Bartley Pack, would have been 10 years of age at the time of Samuel's death and was raised on his old home place on New River. One would presume, however, this costume was reserved for special dress occasions only, and would hardly have been fitting wear for a rugged frontiersman, Indian scout, and agriculturalist who carried his rifle strapped on his shoulder while trekking the outdoors in the early days!

Because his will is so informative and provides so much insight about him, Samuel's will follows in full and serves as a fitting prologue to his biography (B3, 3:140). An appraisal of Samuel's personal estate was ordered by the Monroe Co. Court (B3, 3:146) to be made by John Syms, John Karnes, and Delaney Swinney. When they returned their appraisal to the court in August 1833, it included personal property of only \$306.94--obviously excluding slaves that had all been devised by will--and an even larger amount for the several bonds due the estate. Estate settlements were being made on the estate as late as Nov 1847 (B3, 4:377).

WILL OF SAMUEL PACK, SR.

In The Name of God AMEN

I, Samuel Pack of the county of Monroe & state of Virginia calling to mind that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this my last will and testament & first of all I bequeath my soul into the hands of God, who gave it & my body I recommend to the dust to be buried in a Christian like manner at the discretion of my executors, nothing doubting but at the general resurrection I shall receive the same again by the might & power of God, and as touching my worldly estate as it hath pleased God to bless me with in this life, I give and bequeath in the manners following, to wit:

1st. I give & bequeath to my son Samuel Pack thirty two dollars fifty cents, it being the balance he owes to me to him & his heirs forever.

2nd. I give & bequeath to my grand daughter Rachel Pack \$50 to be paid out of my estate to her and her heirs forever.

3rd. I give & bequeath to my daughter Betsy my negro girl Sally with all her increase to her & her heirs forever.

4th. I give and bequeath to my son-in-law Jacob Decherson my negro girl Nancy to him and his heirs forever,

5th. I give & bequeath to my son Matt Pack the whole of the tract of land on which he now lives containing 135 acres with this reserve that there is a boat landing constantly kept up on said land to him & his heirs forever.

6th. I give & bequeath to my grand son Samuel Pack son of Matt one hundred dollars to be paid either in money or property out of my estate to him and his heirs forever.

7th. I give and bequeath to my son Bartley Pack one negro boy called Mashack and my negro boy called Charles, also a certain part of my old plantation that he now lives upon beginning at the mouth of a branch where I formerly had a still house, near where Jacob Dickerson did live, and with meanders of said branch to the back line & with the back line to include all the lower part of said plantation now occupied by him, with one reserve that is a burying place say one half acre of ground that I chose out for this purpose, which burying place I give and bequeath to (my) heirs jointly & their heirs forever, & the balance to him & his heirs forever with this reserve that he relinquish all claims that he may have against me by note or otherwise.

8th. I give and bequeath to my son William Pack my negro girl Lucy to him & his heirs forever; I also give him all my stock of cattle that he has now on hand also the money that he owes me to him & his heirs forever.

9th. I give & bequeath to my daughter Jennit my negro girl called Nancy with all her increase to her and her heirs forever, also \$400 which I paid toward the tract of land on which she now lives to her & her heirs forever.

10th. I give & bequeath to my son Anderson Pack my Miller tract of land containing 216 acres by survey with all its appurtenances, also my intrust in two copper stills with this reserve of one acre of ground at some suitable place on said land for the purpose of building a free meeting house in which all denominations may preach without interruptings, also my home place on which I now live adjoining the tract that I have deeded to my son Loamie to him & his heirs forever, with this reserve, that he makes a good and sufficient title to the tract of land known by the name of the Hulls tract the right to be made to my grand son Bartley Pack son of Loami to him and his heirs forever; I also give & bequeath to my son Anderson my 2 negro men called Tom and Abram, Jr., also my negro boy Shed to him and his heirs forever with this reserve that he gives me in return one yellow negro boy called Harris. I also give and bequeath to my son Anderson the choice of all my beds & furniture to him & his heirs forever.

11th. I give & bequeath to my daughter Polly one hundred dollars to be paid out of my estate to her & her heirs forever; the balance of my beds & furniture I give & bequeath to my 3 daughters Betsy, Polly & Jennet to them & their heirs forever.

12th. I give & bequeath to my grand daughter Polly Pack & now Polly Shanklin my negro girl Clary to her & her heirs forever with this reserve that she is not to be sold out of the family.

13th. I will and bequeath my ferry boat & boat landing on each side of the River, together with the land adjoining Billy (sic William) Pack's line thence to Bartlit's line running to the back line to my son Bartlet, who is to take charge of old Abram & Fanney his wife & to let them remain on said (land) during their natural life.

14th. I give and bequeath to my friend John W. Walker 1 square acre of ground laying near Peterstown the line to run to commence at a certain spring near the old road so as to include a part of the spring, to run from the spring to the back line on Brush Creek & thence round again to make a square acre to him and his heirs forever, with exception that said Walker is not to sell it out of the family.

15th. I give & bequeath to my son Anderson his choice in my interest in all the lots & houses in Peterstown, also I give & bequeath to him all my interest in all the lots I claim in Peterstown with the exception of 3 which I give and bequeath to my grand sons Augustus Broiles, Milton & Samuel sons of my daughter Jennit. I also will and bequeath to my son Anderson all my interest in the out lands adjoining Peterstown; I also give & bequeath to my sons William & Anderson the other half of my claim of land laying in the state of Ohio to them & their heirs forever.

16th. I give & bequeath to my grand daughter Virginia (daughter of my son Anderson) my negro girl Aggy to her & her heirs forever.

17th. I give & bequeath to my daughter in-law Jane Pack (widow of my son John) my negro man Joe during her natural life or widowhood, but at her death or marriage to return to my grandson Rufus Pack to him and his heirs forever.

18th. I give and bequeath to my sons Anderson & Bartley my negro woman Amey to them & their heirs forever, with a sincere request that they will grant her more than usual privileges & treat her well for kindness to myself & worthy companion that has gone before me; I also give & bequeath to my son Anderson my negro woman Jincy with all her increase to him & his heirs forever. I give and bequeath to my son Loami one black boy called Henry & also one yellow boy called Harris to him & his heirs forever.

19th. I give & bequeath to my grandsons Samuel & Archibald Pack jointly my black boy Hampton, also one half of my claim of land in the state of Ohio to them & their heirs forever.

20th. I give and bequeath all my plantation utensils & all my household & kitchen furniture (except what I have specially bequeathed) to my son Anderson to him & his heirs forever.

21st. I desire that all my hogs, sheep, cattle & horses to be sold & after paying my funeral expenses & all my just debts I desire that all the money I have on hands & all that is due me by bond, account or otherwise to be either laid out in land in the western country or put out at legal usury until the children here mention shall become of age, to wit my grand daughter Virginia, my grandson Josephus son of Bartlet, my great grandson John P. Dunlap son of Rebecca, (and) my great grandson John Pack son of Samuel's.

22nd. I desire that my son Bartley may pay to my grand daughter Polly Pack daughter of Bartley two hundred dollars for the consideration of the boat landing, boat & land attached thereto & also that would pay \$100 in property to Matt Pack's son Samuel to them & their heirs forever.

23rd. I do hereby constitute & appoint my son Anderson Pack & Richard V. Shanklin executors to this my last will & testament hereby revoking all other by me made.

24th. If any of my heirs to whom I have given property shall disagree or try to break my will then my desire is that they may forfeit their part of what I have here given them.

Signed, sealed & acknowledged, delivered in the presents of these witnesses. Given under my hand & seal this 28th of May 1833.

Samuel Pack (SEAL)
(signature)

WITNESSES:

John W. Walker, John Thompson, Henry Hull, Henry White.

At Monroe July Court 1833.

This last will and testament of Samuel Pack, deceased, was presented in Court and proved by the oaths of John W. Walker and Henry White subscribing witnesses thereto and the same is ordered to be recorded and on motion of Anderson Pack and Richard V. Shanklin executors named in the said will who made oath as such and together with Richard Thomas, John Karns, John H. Vawter, Dilaney Swinney, Mordecai Roles, John Syms, Richard Shanklin and Robert Shanklin their securities entered into and acknowledged bond in the penalty of three thousand dollars conditioned as the law directs certificate for obtaining probate thereof in due form is granted them.

Teste: Jno. Hutchison, Jr. CMC

(A1, A2, A3, A4, A5, A6, A7, A8, A11, A12, A13, A14, A15, A16, A17, A18, A19, A20, A21, A22, A23, A24, A25, A26, A27, A28, A29, B1, B2, B3, B4, B5, B6, B7, B8, B9, B10, B11, B12, B13, B14, B15, B16, B17, B18, B19, B20, B21, B22, B23,

B24, B25, B26, B27, B28, B29, B30, B31, B32, B33, B48, C1, C2, C3, C4, C6, C7, C8, C9, C10, C11, C12, C13, C14, D1, D2, D3, D4, D5, D6, D7, D8, D9, D10, D11, D13, D14, D15, D16, D18, D19, D20, D21, D23, D24, D26, D27, D29, D31, D32, D33, D34, D35, D36, D49, D50)

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

A. Census Records.

- A1. 1850 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A2. 1870 Census of Monroe Co., W. Va.
- A3. 1880 Census of Monroe Co., W. Va.
- A4. 1830 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A5. 1860 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A6. 1810 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A7. 1840 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A8. 1810 Census of Giles Co., Va.
- A11. 1850 Census of Miller Co., Mo.
- A12. 1820 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A13. 1830 Census of Mercer Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A14. 1830 Census of Giles Co., Va.
- A15. 1850 Census of Lincoln Co., Mo.
- A16. 1850 Census of Mercer Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A17. 1820 Census of Giles Co., Va.
- A18. 1830 Census of Logan Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A19. 1850 Census of Raleigh Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A20. 1850 Census of Boone Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A21. 1850 Census of Pulaski Co., Va.
- A22. 1840 Census of Mercer Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A23. 1850 Census of Berrien Co., Mich.
- A24. 1840 Census of Miller Co., Mo.
- A25. 1860 Census of Greene Co., Mo.
- A26. 1860 Census of Franklin Co., Mo.
- A27. 1860 Census of Osage Co., Mo.
- A28. 1860 Census of Lincoln Co., Mo.
- A29. 1840 Census of Lincoln Co., Mo.

B. Land, Probate, Tax, and Court Records.

- B1. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Wills.
- B2. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B3. Monroe Co., W. Va., Wills and Inventories.
- B4. Monroe Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B5. Simms Index to Land Grants in West Virginia; by Edgar B. Simms; 1952; Rose City Press, Charleston, W. Va.
- B6. Giles Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B7. Virginia Land Grants and Patents.
- B8. Montgomery Co., Va., Record of Plots.
- B9. Montgomery Co., Va., Deeds.
- B10. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Surveys.
- B11. Montgomery Co., Va., Surveys.
- B12. Monroe Co., W. Va., Court Records/Orders.
- B13. Monroe Co., W. Va., Minutes.
- B14. Summer Co., W. Va., Order Books.
- B15. Mercer Co., W. Va., Wills.
- B16. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Surveys.
- B17. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Land Grants.
- B18. Monroe Co., W. Va., Land Grants.
- B19. Montgomery Co., Va., Land Books.
- B20. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Land Books.

- B21. Giles Co., Va., Land Books.
- B22. Giles Co., Va., Deeds.
- B23. Montgomery Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B24. Monroe Co., W. Va., Surveys.
- B25. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Court Records.
- B26. Mercer Co., W. Va., Land Books.
- B27. Mercer Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B28. Fayette Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B29. Summers Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B30. Mercer Co., W. Va., Bonds.
- B31. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B32. Miller Co., Mo., Wills.
- B33. Lincoln Co., Mo., Wills.
- B48. Monroe Co., W. Va., Personal Property Taxlists.

C. Vital, Church, and Cemetery Records.

- C1. Monroe Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C2. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C3. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C4. Giles Co., Va., Marriage Bonds.
- C5. Broyles Cem., Mud Run of Rich Creek, Monroe Co., W. Va.
- C6. Mercer Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C7. Composite Lists of Marriage Bonds, Parental Permits, and Minister Returns, Monroe Co., W. Va. (1799-1850); by Aubrey O. Smith (comp.); 1962; Beckley, W. Va.
- C8. French Cem., Pearisburg, Giles, Va.
- C9. Dickason Cem., Valley of Peters Mtn., Monroe Co., W. Va.
- C10. Summers Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C11. Mercer Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C12. Greenbrier Cem., Hinton, Summers, W. Va.
- C13. Forest Hills Bapt. Cem., Summers Co., W. Va.
- C14. Thrasher-Lively Cem., Hans Cr., Monroe, W. Va.

D. Compiled and Miscellaneous Records.

- D1. Memoirs: My Life Among Pioneer West Virginians; by Walter J. Pack; 1955; Unpublished mss.
- D2. Personal Records of Aubrey O. Smith, 811 S. Kanawha St., Beckley, W. Va.
- D3. Personal Records of Mrs. Eva B. Pack, 723 W. Princeton St., Orlando, Fla.
- D4. Livelys of America, 1690-1968; by John F. Vallentine; 1968; Nat. Assoc. Lively Families, Butler, Ala. (also Supplement, 1972; Second Supplement, 1982).
- D5. History of Summers County from the Earliest Settlement to the Present Time; by James H. Miller; 1908; Hinton, W. Va.
- D6. Personal Records of Samuel Roy Brown, Cashmere, W. Va.
- D7. History of Monroe Co., W. Va.; by Oren F. Morton; 1916; McClure Pub. Co., Staunton, Va.
- D8. Family Group Records Archives, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D9. DAR Patriot Index; by Natl. Soc. Daughters of the Amer. Rev.; 1990 (Centennial Ed.); Washington, D.C.
- D10. DAR Membership Applications; Natl. Soc. DAR, Washington, D.C.
- D11. Personal Records of Mrs. Herbert Broyles, Lindside, W. Va.
- D13. A History of Middle New River Settlements and Contiguous Territory; by David E. Johnston; 1906; Standard Print. & Pub. Co., Huntington, W. Va.
- D14. Soldiers of Fincastle Co., 1774; by Mary B. Kegley; 1974; Privately pub.

- D15. Militia of Montgomery Co., Va., 1772-1790; by Mary B. Kegley; 1975; Privately pub.
- D16. Point Pleasant: 197 Years Later; by Patricia Burton; 1971; Wonderful West Virginia 35 (10):6-12, 35(11):18-21, 26-27, 35(12):18-24.
- D18. Monroe Watchman; issue of 1/20/1948 (article by Walter J. Pack).
- D19. History of Fayette Co., W. Va.; by J. T. Peters; 1926; Jarrett Print. Co., Charleston, W. Va.
- D20. Battle of Point Pleasant, A Battle of the Revolution; by Lidia Simpson Poffenbarger; 1909; State Gazette Pub., Point Pleasant, W. Va.
- D21. Smith-Riffe Collection of New River Genealogy and Local History; by Aubrey O. Smith (Comp.) and Winton A. Riffe (Co.-comp.), and John F. Vallentine (Ed.); Microfilmed on 17 rolls at Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D23. Documentary History of Dunmore's War, 1774; by Reuben Gold Thwaites and Louise Phelps Kellogg; 1905; Wisc. Hist. Soc., Madison, Wisc.
- D24. Virginia Court of Appeals, October Term, 1794; James Burnside, Appellant Vs. Andrew Reid, Samuel Culbertson, and Thomas Walker, Appellees; and Andrew Reid Vs. James Burnside.
- D26. The Samuel Pack Family; by John F. Vallentine; 1983-4; Gen. J. 12(4):178-200.
- D27. Virginia Genealogist (periodical).
- D29. Personal Records of James H. Martin, 2319 Cliffmont Ave., Bluefield, W. Va.
- D31. Conrad Peters and His Wife Clara Snidow: Their Descendants and Their Ancestry; by Okey Erwin Peters; Not dated; Paducah Print. Co., Paducah, Ky.
- D32. Beckley Post Herald (special issue included within D21).
- D33. Personal Records of Charles Eads, Provo, Utah.
- D34. Descendants of Matthew Pack and His Wife Katherine Lilly, Married 1806; by Kenan & Edna Moody; Not dated; 1607 Mound St., Portsmouth, Ohio; Mss.
- D35. Personal Records of Mrs. Olivia Anderson, 9801 Singleton Drive, Bethesda, Md.
- D36. Monroe Watchman; issue 1/27/1949 (article by Walter J. Pack).
- D49. Montgomery County, Virginia: The First Hundred Years; by C. W. Crush; abt 1983; no publication data.
- D50. A New River Heritage, 4 vols.; by William Sanders; 1991-1994; McClain Printing Co., Parsons, W. Va.; 320 p., 400 p. 332 p., 429 p.

PACK ANCESTRAL LINE (PART III)

FAMILY 224-225

SAMUEL PACK, SR. (1725) and Wife (Unknown)

SAMUEL PACK, SR., b. abt 1725; name of wife unknown; was probably the father of the following two sons (Pack)--reportedly b. in Augusta Co., Va.:

*SAMUEL, b. abt 1755; d. 1833 in Monroe Co., W. Va., probably at his last home on Brush Creek, Monroe, W. Va.; bur. old Pack Cem. on the east side of New River in present-day Summers Co., W. Va.; md. MARY FARLEY. Refer to Family 112-113 for further details about this family.

GEORGE, b. abt 1755; d. abt 1825 on George's Creek, Lawrence Co., Ky.; prob. bur. on Right Hand Fork of George's Creek; md. (1) MARY; md. (2) ELIZABETH BROWN. (Note: refer to George Pack Addendum at end of this section for a continuation of this family.)

Close association along New River and the equivalent ages between George Pack (1757) and Samuel Pack (1755) has led to the conclusion that they were indeed brothers. However, extensive efforts have failed to document their relationship, their parentage, or to determine the exact places and dates of their births, even though many theories and suppositions have been put forward. The tradition existed that Samuel Pack (1755) did have a brother, but in later years his name was unknown (D1).

Chronicles of Border Warfare (D9, p. 96-99) documents an Indian attack on New River in southern West Virginia, and this is of particular importance in recording the presence of an earlier generation Pack in the area: "In October, 1764, about fifty Delaware and Mingo warriors ascended the Great Sandy and came over on New River, where they separated; and forming two parties, directed their steps toward different settlements--one party going toward Roanoke and Catawba--the other in the direction of Jackson's River. They had not long passed when their trail was discovered by three men (Swope, Pack, and Pitman), who were trapping on New River. These men followed the trail till they came to where the Indian party had divided; and judging from the routes which had been taken, that their object was to visit the Roanoke and Jackson's River settlements, they determined on apprizing the inhabitants of their danger. Swope and Pack set out for Roanoke and Pitman for Jackson's River. But before they could accomplish their object, the Indians had reached the settlements on the latter river and on Catawba."

After returning from their depredations and murders, one of the Indian groups was located "on the north bank of New River, opposite an island at the mouth of Indian Creek" and was attacked by Capt. Audrey Paul and his men from Fort Dinwiddie. The soldiers killed many of the Indians, recaptured the Indians' plunder, and released three white captives (D9).

Morton (D3) reported--without supporting evidence--that the trapper Pack on New River in 1763 was named Samuel Pack, that he had "wandered into this region from Tidewater Virginia," and was the father of Samuel Pack (1755) who married Mary Farley. It seems probable that there is a connection between Samuel Pack (1755) and the trapper named Pack who was with Swope and Pitman on New River, obviously the trapper not being Samuel (1755) himself but probably his father. The tradition that the Packs lived continuously on New River beginning in 1764 is improbable considering the times; but the possibility is greater that trapper Pack was leaving his family in one of the Virginia valleys to the eastward while he was trapping westward into the Appalachian Mountains.

Trapper Swope of 1763 has been identified as John Ulrich Swope--later calling himself Joseph Swope--who settled at Swope Depot in Augusta Co., Va., about 1750 and soon afterwards began hunting and trapping in the western mountains (D7). This Swope soon removed to near Swope's Knobs, now Monroe Co., W. Va., where he had a son born in 1753, the first white child reportedly born in the county (sic Monroe Co.). Swope and Pack may, indeed, have made their first connections in Augusta Co.

Mrs. Frances Pack Lilly (dau. of Matthew Pack of Samuel) believed that her grandfather Samuel Pack (1755) had come to New River with a man named Gatcliffe (D2). The Gatliff family moved from Chester Co., Pa., to Augusta Co. about 1753 and resided apparently for a time near what is now Roanoke, Va. (D4). Charles Gatliff (1748-1838), a known associate of Samuel Pack (1755), resided on New River during the 1770's before moving on to Kentucky in 1779, as did his brothers and apparently his mother. As noted previously, it was to the Roanoke settlement that both Swope and Pack went to warn the settlers--for what better reason than that they had left their own families there!

Several leads point toward old Augusta Co., Va., as the interim origin of the West Virginia Pack family, but searches in the records of Augusta Co. as well as Botetourt Co., Va., have failed to locate the Pack family but have located the Swope and Gatcliffe families. A scattering of colonial Pack families have been located from as far south as Paxville, Clarendon, S. Car., where one Joseph Pack received a royal land grant of 10,000 acres in the 1760-1776 period (D11). Pack families settled in several eastern Virginia counties between 1655 and 1700, but family records for these early-day Virginia Packs are sparse and no connection has been made directly to Samuel Pack (1755). More recently (i.e. 1992) a chapter on "Colonial Pack Records in America" has been included in Descendants of Richard Pack of Maryland (D27); this surveys an array of colonial Packs but has failed to pinpoint the ancestry of Samuel Pack (1755).

The George Pack family that settled at Elizabethtown, N. Jer., by 1680 used strikingly similar given names to the West Virginia Packs (D5). By inserting two intermediate generations of Packs living in Frederick Co., Md., the following hypothesis is offered as the possible line of descent of Samuel Pack (1755) of New River from the Packs of Elizabethtown, N. Jer.:

- (1) GEORGE PACK, b. 1634 in England; d. 2 Oct 1704 in Essex Co., N. Jer.; md. (1) ANNA, by whom he had children (Pack): Samuel (md. Elizabeth), Hannah (md. Joseph Robbins), Mary (md. John Scudder), Elizabeth (md. George Sharp), Abigail (md. Mr. Springer), Keziah, and Prudence. George md. (2) ELIZABETH, by whom he had Bethia, Thomas, Job (md. Elizabeth Marsh), and Benjamin. George traditionally came from South England by way of Connecticut, was an original associator (settler) of Elizabethtown, Essex (now Union), N. Jer., took an oath of allegiance there on 19 Feb 1665 to the British government, and was a landowner in Essex Co., N. Jer. (D5, D24). George was the father of
- (2) SAMUEL PACK, b. 24 July 1661 at Elizabeth or Rahway, Essex (now Union), N. Jer.; d. about Jan 1713 in Essex Co.; md. ELIZABETH. Names of their children are unproven. Letters of administration on his estate were issued on 7 Mar 1712/13 to Daniel Sale. Samuel was a landowner in Essex Co., including tracts conveyed him by his father Samuel in 1698 (D5, D24). Samuel may have been the father of
- (3) GEORGE PACK, b. about 1700; d. 1753-54 in Frederick (now Washington) Co., Md.; md. MARGARET. Children (Pack) as proven by George's will: Samuel, George, Thomas, Joseph, Job, Bartimeus (or Baltus), Simon, Mary, Elizabeth, Susannah, John, and Benjamin. George and

family resided on the home place located in Washington (then Frederick) Co., Md. It appears the home place included 30 acres purchased by George Pack on 5 Apr 1753, shortly before his death, from Daniel Ashcroft (B19, E:249); this 30 acres was part of a tract called Skiethorn and was located on Potomac River two miles below the mouth of Licking Creek, adjoining lands of Robert Bretewell.

In his will dated 11 Sep 1753 and probated 21 Mar 1754 in Frederick Co., Md. (B18, A:1:61), George Pack devised legacies to his wife Margaret and his 12 living children. The home place was devised to his two youngest sons, John and Benjamin Pack, both minors, who were directed to take care of their mother Margaret upon their coming of age. (Note: Margaret may have been the mother of other or even all of George's children, but the will specified that John and Benjamin were her sons.) A second tract of 740 acres located on Sleepy Creek on the south side of Potomac River in Frederick Co., Va. (now Morgan Co., W. Va.), was devised to the seven oldest sons. However, ownership records by the Packs of this tract of land have not been found in the land records of either Frederick Co, Va., or Berkeley Co., W. Va.

The heirs of George Pack were recorded paying rent (taxes) on lands in 1768-9 and 1771-72 in then Frederick Co, Md. (D25). With Margaret Pack as executor, George Pack's personal estate was appraised at L30 on 22 Apr 1754, at which time A. Paull was listed as principal creditor and Thomas Pack and Elizabeth Pack as next of kin (B20, A:1:205). In her executor's account dated 19 Aug 1755, Margaret Pack listed a total account of L32 18s, but only L12 5s was left after paying bills (B21, A:1:94).

Of the older sons of George Pack, son George was apparently the George Pack who had a patent dated 1754 to 50 a. called Tar Hill located on the east side of Conegochique (Conococheague) Creek in present-day Washington Co., Md., which George and wife Catherine sold to Adam Piper on 27 May 1771 (B19, O:367). Son Thomas married Elizabeth, resided in Washington and Montgomery Co., Md., and had children Nathan, Richard, Thomas, Zadok, Eleanor, Elizabeth, and Rachel (D26, D27). A Baltus Pack, taylor, resided in the town of Frederick, Md., in 1751 (B19, B:575). Also serving from Frederick Co., Md., in the French & Indian War in 1757-8 were Simon, Joseph, and Jacob Pack (D27).

A Samuel Pack of Frederick Co., Md., gave a bill of sale (in trust) of personal property on 30 June 1766 to Jacob Klein and John Wilson as security against damages that might be levied on Samuel by George Paul (B19, K:664). Although it seems probable this Samuel Pack was the eldest son of George, he shortly afterwards disappears from western Maryland records. It is hypothesized that Samuel Pack son of George might be the same as

- (4) SAMUEL PACK, b. abt 1725, the trapper on New River in 1764; name of wife unknown but apparently had sons George (1757) and
- (5) SAMUEL PACK, b. abt 1755 probably in Augusta Co., Va.; md. MARY FARLEY; the ancestors of the New River (W. Va.) Packs.

The continuing use of the male given names of Samuel and George make this hypothetical line of descent particularly attractive; it also seems to fit chronological and geography requirements, and is, in fact, the only attractive potential ancestral line assembled for Samuel Pack (1755).

Nevertheless, the documentary origin of Samuel Pack (1755) still remains unproven and must now be left to future discovery!

George Pack (1757) Addendum

GEORGE PACK, probably the son of Samuel Pack, Sr. (1725), was b. abt 1757, reportedly in Augusta Co., Va.; d. abt 1825 on George's Creek, Lawrence Co., Ky. (B6, D19); prob. bur. on Right Hand Fork of George's Creek; md. (1) abt 1778 in New River area, W. Va., to MARY (maiden surname unknown), she b. abt 1757 and d. 1796-9 probably in present-day Bland Co., Va. Children (Pack)--probably all b. in New River area:

SAMUEL, b. abt 1780; d. (admon.) September 1839 on Sandy River, Lawrence Co., Ky.; md. 11 Nov 1801 in Monroe Co., W. Va., to JANE BROWN, b. 1780-1784, the ceremony performed by Rev. Jacob Cook (C2). Children (Pack)--prob. all b. Lawrence Co., Ky.: Berry (md. (1) Rebecca Blevins, (2) Elizabeth Hilman), Polly (md. Wm. Fannon), Sarah (Sally) (md. (1) James Boyd, (2) James Calloway), Cornelius M. (md. Nancy Evans), Jane (md. John Vanhoose), Samuel (md. (1) Mary Jane Evans, (2) Sarah A.), prob. George (md. Anna Fannon), and probably John (md. (1) Sarah Ann Endicott, (2) Rebecca Muncy).

"Samuel Pack of George" paid personal property taxes in Monroe Co. in 1802 (B17). Samuel was a farmer and moved from the New River area of W. Va., to then Floyd Co., Ky., between 1801 and 1805, the birth year of his first known child. While included in Floyd Co., Samuel was appointed a road viewer in 1808 and a road surveyor in 1820 (B9, 1:48, 3:224); and in 1822 Samuel and Charles Pack (his brother) were appointed to view a new road in Lawrence Co. (B5, 1:22). He and his family are recorded in the 1810 and 1820 censuses in Floyd Co. (A3, A2) and in 1830 in Lawrence Co. (A5).

From 1822 through 1837 Samuel was recorded as a taxpayer in Lawrence Co., paying taxes on 50 a. in 1825 and 100 a., 1826-1837 (B6). He received three Ky. land surveys in Lawrence Co. (B7). The first survey dated 2 Jan 1822 was for 50 a. on the Louisa Fork of Sandy River; it was granted to Samuel Pack as assignee of George Pack on 16 Sep 1823 (B8, D:423). Fifty a. was surveyed for him on Sandy River on 20 Sep 1822, and 100 a. on Louisa Fork on 17 Oct 1832 (B7). Additional land transactions for Samuel in Lawrence Co. were as follows (B8): bought 25(?) a. on Louisa Fork from John Daniel on 7 July 1825 (A:119), sold 50 a. on the west side of Sandy River to Archibald Borders on 9 Feb 1833 (B:167), sold 30 a. on the east side of Sandy River to Charles Pack on 20 Sep 1833 (B:171), and sold 50 a. on the east side of Sandy River on 9 July 1833 to Archibald Borders (B:175).

Letters of administration on the estate of Samuel Pack, dec., were issued by the Lawrence Co. Court in Sep 1839 to Cornelius Pack and George Pack (i.e. sons) (B5, 3:25), the widow Jane having relinquished her right to serve; and an appraisal was ordered. On 28 Aug 1841 the heirs and representatives of Samuel Pack, dec. (Berry Pack, William Farrow (sic Fannon), Cornelius M. Pack, James Boyd and wife Sally, Samuel Pack, and John Vanhoose and wife Jane) sold 75 a. to Joseph Davis, the tract being described as where Samuel formerly lived on the east side of Sandy River (B8, C:207).

ELIZABETH, b. abt 1784; md. (bond) 21 June 1804 in Monroe Co., to ELIJAH CALLAWAY, son of Isaiah/Joshua and Sarah. This family is recorded in Giles Co., Va., in 1810 (A1) and then included two apparent sons aged 0-10 years. This family may have moved to the

Floyd/Lawrence Co. area in Kentucky, since Callaways are later found there.

CHARLES, b. abt 1787; d. about 1838 in Lawrence Co., Ky.; md. (1) 17 Nov 1808 in Floyd Co., Ky., to BETSY CRUM; md. (2) 1825 to ANNA or ANNDOISHIA SELLARDS, who d. in Lawrence Co. in April 1850 (B5). No probate or other formal record has been found that documents the children of Charles. However, based on sex-and-age listings in his household in the censuses (A3, A2, A5), it appears that Charles had eleven children, possibly four males and five females by his first wife and one each by the second wife. It appears probable that children by Betsy included the following (Pack)--all born in the Lawrence Co. area: Leodoshia (Dotia) (md. Reuben Vanhoose), Archibald (md. (1) Mary Callaway, (2) Mary Muncy), George (md. Elizabeth A.), Andrew (or Leandrus) (md. Sarah Brown), Bartley (md. (1) Anna Fluta, (2) Mary A. Sellards), and Elizabeth (md. John Borders).

Charles was a farmer in Lawrence Co. Following his marriage in 1808 to Betsy Crum in Floyd Co. (C4)--Samuel Pack having signed the marriage bond--the next record of him was in the 1810 Census of Floyd Co. (A3), when he was recorded with a wife, one son, and one daughter, and in 1811 when Charlie Pack was appointed a road surveyor (B9). Charles and Samuel Pack were appointed to view a new road in Lawrence Co. in 1822 (B5, 1:22), and Charles paid taxes in Lawrence Co. from 1822 to 1837; his taxlist entries included a 50-a. Charles Pack survey on Louisa Creek in 1825, 80 a. on Sandy River in 1826, 175 a. on Sandy River in 1827, a 100-a. Charles Pack survey in 1831, and 50 a. on Tug Fork in 1837 (B6).

Charles received a warrant for 50 a. on Big Sandy River in Lawrence Co. on 29 July 1822 and 50 a. in Lawrence Co. on Chestnut Shoal Cr. on 3 Apr 1824 (B7). Charles was involved in the following six land conveyances in Lawrence Co. (B8): (1) sold 30 a. on west side of Sandy River to Michael Borders on 3 May 1830, George Pack, Jr., and James Boyd witnessing (B:48), (2) bought of Joseph Davis 30 a. on east side of Sandy River on 3 May 1831, James Boid and George Pack, Jr., witnessing (B:49), (3) bought from Samuel Pack 30 a. on east side of Sandy River on 20 Sep 1833 (B:171), (4) sold (with Anndoshia Pack co-signing) 25 a. on west side of Levisy Creek of Big Sandy River to Michael Borders on 20 Sep 1833, George Pack, Herrel Bryans, and Andrew Pack witnessing (B:194), (5) bought 50 a. on west side of Tug Fork of Big Sandy from Alfred Jones and wife Nancy on 28 Sep 1833 (B:189), and (6) sold 56 a. on Chestnut Shoal Creek to James Boyd on 18 Feb 1834 (B:284).

Charles apparently left no will, and the court orders for Lawrence Co. for the 1830-1838 period have been lost or destroyed (B5, Vol. 2). However, the Lawrence Co. Court in April 1850 appointed George Pack (prob. son of Charles) as administrator of the personal estate of Ann (sic widow of Charles) (B5).

CHRISTINA or CHRISTENA, b. 1 Mar 1788 in Va.; d. 15 Aug 1854 at George's Creek in Lawrence Co.; md. 6 July 1809 in Floyd Co., Ky., to MICHAEL BORDERS. Michael, son of John Borders and wife Elizabeth Sellards, was b. 1788 at Walker's Station, now Bland Co., Va.; d. after 1860 in Lawrence Co.; md. (1) Christina Pack; md. (2) Matilda Bowans, b. 1802 in Ky. Children by Christina (Borders)-- b. Lawrence Co.: Catherine (md. Joseph Davis), Daughter (d. young), Milly (md. William Thompson), Frances Jane (md. John Hale), Daniel (md. (1) Sarah Easterling, (2) Mary (Polly) Pack), Arthur, Elizabeth (md. John Burton), and Henry (md. (1) Sarah Hale, (2) Abigail Wheeler). Michael was a farmer and resided on

George's Creek in Lawrence Co., being recorded there in the 1830-1860 censuses (A5, A6, A7, A8). Michael came from Giles Co., Va., with his father's family, which settled below the mouth of Tom's Creek (D23).

JANE, b. abt 1790; md. 19 Dec 1809 in Monroe Co. by Rev. James Ellison to THOMAS FARLEY (C2), probable son of Thomas Farley and wife Patty Lester. Thomas and family were listed in Giles Co. censuses in 1810 and 1820 (A1, A4), and Thomas paid personal property taxes 1811-1818 in Giles Co. (B1).

GEORGE, b. 1796 in Va.; d. 1860-6 in Wayne Co., W. Va.; md. 27 Sep 1819 in Floyd Co., Ky., to SARAH LAIN or LAYNE, b. 1802 in Va. Children (Pack): Kiziah (md. Joshua R. Wheeler), John C. (md. Rebecca), James P. (md. Hannah Nelson), Samuel (md. Elizabeth), Calisty (md. James M. Remy), Charles (md. Levina Chandler), Allen (md. Purlina Chandler), William Harrison (md. Cassa Adkins), Anderson, Sarah Ann (md. William Remy), George or Pharaoh, and prob. William (md. Julina Wheeler). George was a farmer residing in Lawrence Co. until 1841 when he moved to Wayne Co., W. Va., and settled on 12 Pole Creek. In the census records George was first recorded in Floyd Co. in 1820 (A2); his household then consisted of himself, wife, one young daughter, and no slaves. George is recorded in 1830 and 1840 in the censuses of Lawrence Co. (A5, A6) but in Wayne Co., W. Va., in 1850 and 1860 (A13, A14). On 1 May 1825 George was appointed supervisor of a road on George's Creek; his assigned hands included Samuel Pack and Berry Pack (B5, 1:149).

George received warrants in Lawrence Co. for 50 a. on a fork of Big Sandy on 29 July 1822 and for 50 a. on Louisa Fork of Sandy River on 18 Aug 1830 (B7). While residing in Lawrence Co., he bought and sold several small tracts of land (B8, B:389, 439, C:60, 193, 351) but is found paying taxes on only 50 a. of land in most years from 1822 through 1840 (B6). Lawrence Co. deeds show his removal to Wayne Co. was in early 1841, where he began paying personal property taxes in 1842. In Wayne Co. George owned 100 a. on 12 Pole Creek (also referred to as Hezekiah's or Kiah's Creek) (B13) and served as deacon and moderator of the Kiah's Creek Church (D21). During the Civil War George Pack was picked up by the Confederates, after which he affirmed he was not a pro-Union activist, and also stated that he had a nephew Samuel Pack living in Wayne Co. (D20). In 1866-1869 the heirs conveyed their interests in the land of George Pack, deceased, "on the left hand side of Hezekiah Creek on the left fork of 12 Pole" to Samuel Pack of Lincoln Co., W. Va. (B14, G:321, 322, J:230).

Son (prob.), age 10-16 in 1810 (A1).

Daughter (prob.), age 10-16 in 1810 (A1).

George md. (2) 20 Dec 1799 in Monroe Co. to ELIZABETH BROWN, the marriage being performed by the Rev. Jacob Cook (C2). Elizabeth, dau. of William Brown, was b. 1775 in Va. (A7); d. 1856-1860 in Lawrence Co., Ky. Children (Pack)--first four prob. b. Va. (then Giles Co.), remainder in Ky. (prob. then Floyd Co.):

REBECCA, b. abt 1802; d. 1830-40 in Lawrence Co.; md. 23 Mar 1822 in Floyd Co. to WILLIAM BOYD (C4). This family is recorded in the 1830 and 1840 censuses of Lawrence Co. (A5, A6), but Rebecca had died prior to 1840. Census records suggest there were at least seven children in the family, but their names have not been determined. On 17 Sep 1831 William Boyd sold to William Pack a tract of land on the right hand fork of George's Cr. cornering Elizabeth Pack's 50-acre survey (B8, B:69), with Bazzeal Hays and

Isaac Pack witnessing. James Boyd was appointed administrator of the estate of William Boyd, dec., in January 1842 (B5).
MARGARET (PEGGY), b. 1804 in Giles Co., Va.; d. 23 July 1859 on George's Creek, Lawrence Co., Ky. (C4); md. 24 Mar 1820 in Floyd Co., Ky., to **HERRELL O'BRYANT** (C4), b. 1791 in Va. or N. Car., and d. after 1860. Children (O'Bryant)--b. Lawrence Co.: James, Isaac, Owen (md. Lucinda Pack), Sarah Ann, John, Dotia, Mary J., Juliann, Christina, Delia, and Margaret. Herrell was a farmer and resided in Lawrence Co.

SARAH ANN (SALLY), b. 22 Mar 1806; d. 16 Apr 1849 at Charley, Lawrence, Ky.; bur. Pack Cem. near Mary United Baptist Ch. (D12); md. 22 Sep 1825 to **BAZIEL HAYES**. Baziel (also Basil or Bazzeal), an apparent adopted son of one Isaac Hayes (D12), was b. 28 Mar 1806 prob. in Wise Co., Va.; d. 15 Jan 1889 at Charley; bur. in Pack Cem. (D12, D14); md. (1) Sarah Ann Pack; md. (2) 15 Apr 1850 to Ardelia Bowling, b. 1832 and d. 19 Feb 1911. Children by Sally (Hayes)--b. George's Cr., Lawrence Co.: William (md. (1) Elizabeth Murray, (2) Margaret Carter), Elizabeth (md. James Vanhooose), Isaac (md. Katherine Vanhooose), Julia Ann (md. John Rob Spencer), John (md. Elizabeth Thompson), Delila (Lilia) (md. Greenville Travis), Frances (Fanny) (md. Hiram Jordan), Mary Ann (md. Moses Vanhooose), Val (d. young), Baziel, Jr. (d. in infancy), Sarah Ann (md. Martin Van Buren Dixon), Allen (md. Julia Carter), Andrew (md. Louise Moore), and Marion (d. infancy).

Baziel was a farmer and resided in Lawrence Co. on George's Creek. On 3 Dec 1828 he received a warrant for 60 a. "whereon said Hayes now lives" on George's Cr.; he later added several additional tracts of land (D12, D13, D14). In 1850 he owned real estate valued at \$7000; and the widow Elizabeth Pack still resided in his household (A7).

WILLIAM, b. 1810 in Giles Co., Va. (C7); d. 1 June 1853 in Lawrence Co. (C7); md. 25 Nov 1830 in Lawrence Co. to **MATILDA BOWANS** (C5, b. 1814 in Ky. Matilda married secondly on 30 May 1863 to Michael Borders. Children (Pack)--b. Lawrence Co.: Elizabeth (md. John Young), Phebe (md. Ehud Justice), John B. (md. Sarah Jane Castle), Andrew, Daniel (md. (1) Julia A. Thompson, (2) Mrs. Nancy Surim), William (md. Elizabeth Bowen), and George W. (md. Emeline). William was a farmer and resided on George's Creek, Lawrence Co., where he was recorded on the tax rolls beginning in 1831 (B6) and in the 1840 and 1850 censuses (A6, A7).

On 17 Sep 1831 William Pack purchased from William Boyd (both of Lawrence Co.) a tract of 50 a. on the right hand fork of George's Cr. adj. Elizabeth Pack's 50-acre survey (B8, B:69), with Bazzeal Hays and Isaac Pack witnessing. This tract was sold by William and wife Matilda to Bazel Hayes on 23 Aug 1841 (B8, C:205). A second tract of 100 a. on George's Cr. in Lawrence Co. was sold to Archibald Brown on 8 May 1852 (B8, D:378). William also owned adjoining tracts of land on Tom's Creek in Floyd but later Johnson Co., one tract of 50 a. having been purchased from John Vanhooose on 6 Aug 1833 (B15, C:386) and a second tract of 100 a. on Baker's Branch in Floyd Co. surveyed to him on 4 Mar 1835 (B7). On 5 Dec 1848 William sold to Eliphus Preston the 100-a. tract on Baker's Branch of Tom's Creek and on 2 Jan 1849 a tract of 40 a. on Tom's Creek and Caperus Branch adjoining William Pack's patent to Adam B. Wiley (B12, A:466, 333).

ISAAC, b. 1812 in then Floyd Co., Ky.; d. after 1880; md. 19 May 1831 in Lawrence Co. to **JEMIMA BORDERS** (C5), dau. of John Borders and wife Jane Nelson and b. 1815 on Louisa Fork, Lawrence Co. (D13). Children (Pack)--b. Lawrence Co.: John (md. Jane Wheeler), Jane (md. Hiram Boyd), William (md. Mary Ann Frances), Elizabeth,

Lucinda (md. Owen O'Bryant), George W., Lewis (md. Susan A. Ramy), Frances (Fanny), Isaac, Jr. (md. Louisa Vanhooose), Jemima (md. Allen H. Thompson, Anderson, Matilda, a son (b. stillborn), daughter (d. young), Hezekiah (md. Levina Borders), and Columbus.

Isaac was a farmer and resided on George's Creek near Charley, Lawrence Co. (D13), where he bought and sold various tracts of land. He was recorded in the Lawrence Co. censuses in 1840-1880 (A6, A7, A8, A9, A16) and on the tax rolls there beginning in 1831 (B6). Isaac received a warrant for 100 a. on George's Cr. on 16 Oct 1834 and a second warrant there for 361 a. on 16 June 1848 (B7). When Isaac bought from Bazeal Hayes and wife Ardelia on 20 Jan 1870 a 100-a. tract located on the right hand fork of George's Creek, it was described as adjoining not only his own property line but also adjoining Reuben Vanhooose, Isaac Pack, Jr., and John Spencer (B8, J:103). The single tract of 25 a. he was shown paying taxes on in 1837 (B6) was apparently his portion of his father's homestead, the division of which was made, with their mother's permission, by Isaac and his brother William in 1832 (B8, D:60).

ESTHER, b. 1815; md. Sep 1835 in Lawrence Co. to WESLEY THOMPSON (C5), b. 1809 in Ky. Children (Thompson)--b. Lawrence Co.: Thomas, Elizabeth, Russell, Nancy, Isaac, Valina and/or Pernelia, Mary, Allen H., Asbury H., Julia A., Daniel, Emaline, Myard H., Margaret, and Jane. Wesley Thompson was a farmer and resided in Lawrence Co.

DELILA, b. 1819; md. 1839 in Lawrence Co. to THOMAS McKINSTER (C5). Thomas, son of Ambrose McKinster and wife Elizabeth Spencer, was b. 9 May 1821 in Ky.; md. (1) Delila Pack; md. (2) Jane Hall (D12). Children (McKinster)--b. Lawrence Co.: Elizabeth, Sarah Ann, Harrison W., Louisa, and Louisiana. Thomas McKinster was a farmer and resided in Lawrence Co.

As noted previously, George Pack was associated with Samuel Pack on New River as early as 1774 (D8, D10). (Refer to "Military Records" under Family 112-113 for a discussion of military service of both George and Samuel during the Revolutionary War period.) Although but few records have been found in the New River area that pertain to him, George Pack apparently continued to reside in the upper New River area until his removal to Kentucky shortly after 1811.

Two tracts of land then in Montgomery Co., Va., were issued to George Pack. One tract of 140 a. on Wolf Creek of New River (now in Bland Co., Va.) adjoining Jacob Dooley/Dowling was granted to Samuel on 6 Aug 1787 (B4, 10:540). On 16 Feb 1797 George Pack and wife Mary of Wythe Co., Va., sold this tract (then included in Wythe Co. on Wolf Creek a branch of New River adjoining Jacob Dowling) to John Hamilton for L30 (B3, 2:270). The second tract of 100 a. on Clear Fork of Wolf Creek adjoining Samuel Sellard was surveyed to George on 10 Apr 1790 (B2, D:63; D43). This survey makes reference to a treasury warrant to George Pack dated 15 Nov 1783. Since the later disposition of this property has not been found, he may have lost it through mortgage or some conflict in title or assigned his rights to others.

George Pack was recorded in the 1793, 1795, and 1796 taxlists of Wythe Co., Va., in James Davis's Dist. north of Walker Mountain (B16). While a resident of Wythe Co., Va., George Pack joined others in 1793 in petitioning for the formation of a new county (i.e. Tazewell) (D17, p. 288). In 1795 George joined Samuel Sellard, John Sellard, Thomas Wiley, John Borders, and others in a second but similar petition. A third petition, again seeking the formation of a new county, was signed 1796-7 by George Pack and Samuel Pack--apparently father and son--and others. As a result the new county of Tazewell

Co., Va., was created in 1799-1800, which then included the branches of Wolf Creek now found in Bland Co.

In the late 1790's George moved his family down New River, probably to be nearer to his apparent brother Samuel. George's second marriage and the marriages of three of his children are recorded in Monroe Co. (i.e. east side of New River) in 1799, 1801, 1804, and 1809, respectively (C1, C2). George paid personal property taxes in Monroe Co. from 1799 through 1806 but not subsequently (B17). (Note: these entries for George Pack in the early records of Monroe Co. has suggested to some the presence of an older generation George Pack in the area, but it seems assured that all such records referred to George Pack (1757).) George and his family were recorded in the 1810 Census of Giles Co., Va. (i.e. west side of New River) as follows: males--two aged 10-16, one 45 and over; females--two aged 0-10, one aged 10-16, and one aged 26-45 16) (A1). George Pack is listed for one white tithe in the Giles Co., Va., taxlists of 1811 (B1) but then disappears from the New River area. It is believed that George's residence during the 1799-1811 period was on the west side of New River in now Summers Co., W. Va.

George is next picked up in the 1820 Census of Floyd Co., Ky. (A2), owning no slaves. (Note: there is no record of George ever owning slaves, this in contrast to his apparent brother Samuel and family; whether this resulted from moral scruples or from financial status is uncertain.) His sons George, Samuel, and Charles and a son-in-law Michael Borders were also listed as heads of families in Floyd Co. in 1820. George had probably visited in Kentucky prior to his removal there in 1811-1813 since his sons Samuel and Charles were recorded in the 1810 Census of Floyd Co., Ky. (A3). On 1 May 1822 George was exempted from paying taxes and working on the roads in the future by the Lawrence Co. court (B5, 1:20). As George Pack, Sr., he was listed in Lawrence Co. as an owner of personal property in 1822 and 1823 (B6); but beginning in 1826, i.e. following his death, his widow Elizabeth Pack replaced him as a taxpayer.

The center of Pack settlement in Kentucky was on George's Creek, originally in Floyd Co. but now mostly in Lawrence Co. but partly in adjoining Johnson Co. George received a warrant for 50 a. in Floyd Co. on 24 Jan 1822, and Elizabeth received a warrant of 50 a. in Lawrence Co. on 7 Oct 1825 (B7); Elizabeth began paying taxes on the combined 100 a. in 1826 (B6). In his Revolutionary War pension application dated 26 Sep 1825, Elizabeth's father William Brown affirmed that he had lived with Elizabeth and her husband [Samuel] for "the past 7 or 8 years" (D19). The application further stated that George had previously died leaving "a helpless widow and family." The presence of a second male aged 45 years and over in George's household in 1820 was undoubtedly his father-in-law William Brown (A2). Sex and age categories shown for Elizabeth Pack's household in 1830 (A5) suggest the following were included: herself, her father William Brown, sons William and Isaac, and daughters Esther and Delila.

A court order dated April 1829 referred to a road that ran "from the Widow Pack's inclosure up to the head of the right hand fork of George's Creek (B5, 1:351). On 10 Aug 1833 Elizabeth Pack conveyed to Bazel Hase (i.e. her son-in-law) 30 a. on the right hand fork of George's Creek, it being part of her 50-a. survey (B8, B:151); this conveyance mentions a boundary line agreed to by Isaac and William Pack. Consideration on the conveyance was \$1 with said grantee maintaining Elizabeth for life. Here in the Bazel Hayes household Elizabeth was still residing when recorded in the 1850 Census of Lawrence Co. (A7), this after her daughter Sally's death and Bazel's remarriage to Ardelia Bowling.

The remaining 20 a. in her survey was conveyed by Elizabeth Pack of Lawrence to Hiram Boyd of same place on 18 Apr 1856 (B8, M:384). (Note: Hiram Boyd in 1847 had married Jane Pack, believed to have been a daughter of

Isaac (b. 1812) of George (1757).) This 20-acre subdivision was further described as adjoining the conditional line made by Isaac and William Pack. With the consent of their mother, Isaac and William Pack as heirs of George Pack, deceased, in March 1832 had made a division of "the homestead where their father (had) lived," this undoubtedly referring to their father's 50-a. tract (B8, D:60).

(A1, A2, A3, A4, A5, A6, A7, A8, A9, A10, A11, A12, A13, A14, A15, A16, B1, B2, B3, B4, B5, B6, B7, B8, B9, B10, B11, B12, B13, B14, B15, B16, B17, B18, B19, B20, B21, C1, C2, C3, C4, C5, C6, C7, C8, C9, C10, D1, D2, D3, D4, D5, D6, D7, D8, D9, D10, D11, D12, D13, D14, D15, D16, D17, D18, D19, D20, D21, D22, D23, D24, D25, D26, D27)

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

A. Census Records.

- A1. 1810 Census of Giles Co., Va.
- A2. 1820 Census of Floyd Co., Ky.
- A3. 1810 Census of Floyd Co., Ky.
- A4. 1820 Census of Giles Co., Va.
- A5. 1830 Census of Lawrence Co., Ky.
- A6. 1840 Census of Lawrence Co., Ky.
- A7. 1850 Census of Lawrence Co., Ky.
- A8. 1860 Census of Lawrence Co., Ky.
- A9. 1870 Census of Lawrence Co., Ky.
- A10. 1850 Census of Johnson Co., Ky.
- A11. 1860 Census of Johnson Co., Ky.
- A12. 1870 Census of Johnson Co., Ky.
- A13. 1850 Census of Wayne Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A14. 1860 Census of Wayne Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A15. 1870 Census of Wayne Co., W. Va.
- A16. 1880 Census of Lawrence Co., Ky.

B. Land, Probate, Tax, and Court Records.

- B1. Giles Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B2. Montgomery Co., Va., Record of Plots.
- B3. Wythe Co., Va., Deeds.
- B4. Montgomery Co., Va., Land Grants.
- B5. Lawrence Co., Ky., Court Orders.
- B6. Lawrence Co., Ky., Taxlists.
- B7. Kentucky Land Warrants, Surveys, and Grants.
- B8. Lawrence Co., Ky., Deeds.
- B9. Floyd Co., Ky., Order Books.
- B10. Johnson Co., Ky., Taxlists.
- B11. Lawrence Co., Ky., Wills.
- B12. Johnson Co., Ky., Deeds.
- B13. Wayne Co., W. Va., Land Books.
- B14. Wayne Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B15. Floyd Co., Ky., Deeds.
- B16. Wythe Co., Va., Taxlist, 1793-1800; by Malita Warden Murphy and James L. Douthat; 1985; Mountain Pres, Signal Mountain, Tenn.
- B17. Monroe Co., W. Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B18. Frederick Co., Md., Wills.
- B19. Frederick Co., Md., Deeds.
- B20. Frederick Co., Md., Inventories.
- B21. Frederick Co., Md., Accounts.

C. Vital, Church, and Cemetery Records.

- C1. Monroe Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C2. Composite Lists of Marriage Bonds, Parental Permits, and Minister Returns, Monroe Co., W. Va. (1799-1850); by Aubrey O. Smith (comp.); 1962; Beckley, W. Va.
- C3. Pack-Preston Cem., Johnson Co., Ky.
- C4. Floyd Co., Ky., Marriages.
- C5. Lawrence Co., Ky., Marriages.
- C6. Johnson Co., Ky., Marriages.
- C7. Lawrence Co., Ky., Deaths.
- C8. Cabell Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C9. Wayne Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C10. Lawrence Co., Ky., Births.

D. Compiled and Miscellaneous Records.

- D1. Memoirs: My Life Among Pioneer West Virginians; by Walter J. Pack; 1955; Unpublished mss.
- D2. History of Summers County from the Earliest Settlement to the Present Time; by James H. Miller; 1908; Hinton, W. Va.
- D3. History of Monroe Co., W. Va.; by Oren F. Morton; 1916; McClure Pub. Co., Staunton, Va.
- D4. The Gatliff Family: Ancestors and Descendants of Capt. Charles Gatliff of Virginia and Kentucky; by Helen J. Black; 1960; Privately pub. at Wichita, Kan.
- D5. Thomas Hatch of Barnstable and Some of His Descendants; by Charles Lathrop Pack; 1930; Soc. Col. Wars in the State of N. Jer., Newark, N. Jer.
- D6. Smith-Riffe Collection of New River Genealogy and Local History; by Aubrey O. Smith (Comp.) and Winton A. Riffe (Co.-comp.), and John F. Vallentine (Ed.); Microfilmed on 17 rolls at Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D7. The Swope Family in America, 1720-1970: Two Hundred Fifty Years in America; by Virgil Leonard Swope; 1971; Swope Family Archives, San Jose, Cal.
- D8. Documentary History of Dunmore's War, 1774; by Reuben Gold Thwaites and Louise Phelps Kellogg; 1905; Wisc. Hist. Soc., Madison, Wisc.
- D9. Chronicles of Border Warfare; by Alexander S. Withers; 1895 (Repub.); Robert Clarke Co., Cincinnati, Ohio.
- D10. The Samuel Pack Family; by John F. Vallentine; 1983-4; Gen. J. 12(4):178-200.
- D11. Personal Records of Nancy Pack Peters, 365 Bandon Ave., Bandon, Ore.
- D12. History of Lawrence County, Ky.; by Regina Tackett, Patricia Jackson, and Janice Thompson; 1991; Curtis Media Corp., Dallas, Tex.
- D13. Appalachia Crossroads; Descendants of Hezekiah Sellards; by Clayton B. Cox; 1977; Gateway Press, Baltimore, Md.
- D14. A Genealogical Record of the Descendants of Bazeal Hayes of Charley, Lawrence Co., Ky.; by Thelma Chandler Walter and Theodore B. Walter; 1981; Gateway Press, Baltimore, Md.
- D15. The Van Hoose Family; by Charles Parsons; Not dated; Economy Printers, Ashland, Ky.
- D16. The Van Hoose-Van Hooser-Van Huss Family in the United States; by Joyce Lindstrom; 1994; Lewisville, Ida.
- D17. Archives of the Pioneers of Tazewell Co., Va.; by Netti Schreiner-Yantis; 1973; Springfield, Va.
- D18. Montgomery Co., Virginia, Ca 1790: A Comprehensive Study; by Netti Schreiner-Yantis; 1972; Springfield, Va.

- D19. Revolutionary War Pension Applications, National Archives, Washington, D.C. (application of William Brown).
- D20. Personal Records of David S. Adkins, Rte. 1, Box 39, West Hamlin, W. Va.
- D21. Personal Records of Mrs. Edna Jenelle, Apt. 105, 99 13th St., Huntington, W. Va.
- D22. Personal Records of Ray Pack, 88 Sidney Court, San Rafael, Cal.
- D23. Johnson County Kentucky, 2 vols.; by Mitchell Hall; 1928; Standard Press, Louisville, Ky.
- D24. Ancestral File, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D25. Early Lists of Frederick Countians, 1765-1775; by F. Edward Wright; 1986; Family Line Publications, Silver Spring, Md.; 29 p.
- D27. International Genealogical Index, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D28. Descendants of Richard Pack of Maryland, 1674-1991, with American Colonial and English Records for the Pack Surname; by Miriam Young Pack; 1992; Wichita, Kansas.

FARLEY ANCESTRAL LINE

FAMILY 226-227

FRANCIS FARLEY, SR. (1703) and ELIZABETH CROSTIC (1718)

FRANCIS FARLEY, SR., son of John Farley, Jr. (1670) and wife Elizabeth Archer (1674), was b. 25 Oct 1703 in Chesterfield (then Henrico) Co., Va.; d. 22 Oct 1791 in Summers (then Greenbrier) Co.; bur. Matt Farley farm, Summers Co.; md. (1) abt 1723 to Nancy Whitlow, b. abt 1707, d. abt 1750. Children (Farley)--b. Chesterfield (then Henrico) Co., Va.:

FRANCIS, JR., b. 1726; d. after 9 Sep 1833 in White Co. Ill.; md. abt 1758 to NANCY or ANNE BLANKENSHIP, an apparent sister of Drewry Blankinship, an early resident of Bedford Co., Va. (D1). Children (Farley)--probably all b. in then Bedford Co.: Nancy Elizabeth (md. James Ellison), Adam (md. Catherine Boyd), Polly or Mary, Drewry (md. Mary Adkins), Edward (md. Lettice McMullen), Johanna (Ann) (md. John Christian), Francis (md. Rachel McMullen), and Gideon (md. Mary McDonald). This listing of 10 children for Francis, Jr., is traditional (D1, D7) but is based principally on strong family association. Three sons--Adam, Drewry, and Edward--are verified by court records (B18).

Little is known about Frances, Jr., before his coming to the New River area. He undoubtedly was born and raised in Chesterfield (then Henrico) Co., Va. and may have lived in the early 1750's in Cumberland Co., Va. It is probable he followed his brother Thomas to the Blackwater area of present-day Franklin Co. in the mid or late 1760's and may have been the Francis Farley recorded in the 1767 taxlists of Pittsylvania Co. (D1). He was recorded living on the west side of New River in 1774 (D3) in present-day Summers Co., W. Va. After leaving Fort Farley on the west side of New River by 1778, he settled on the east side of New River near the mouth of Buffalo Creek (also referred to as Buffalo Run) opposite and about 1 1/2 miles above Fort Farley and the mouth of Tom's Run.

The lands of Francis opposite Culbertson's Bottom on the east side of New River consisted of five tracts, apparently all contiguous. On 5 May 1784 Francis Farlor (sic Farley) received a survey of 120 a., described as being on New River on the east side and below the mouth of Indian Creek (B19, 1:86). The survey specified that Francis had been entitled to it by right of settlement prior to 1 Jan 1778. This tract began at the mouth of Buffalo Creek and extended down river for about one mile; at its widest point it was about 1/4 mile wide. On this tract was a good "hollow" or bottom, on which Francis located his farstead.

On 8 June 1782 Francis Farley entered 300 a. by virtue of a certificate issued by the Virginia District Court and described as located about three miles below the mouth of Indian Creek near where he then lived (B20, p. 57). From this entry Francis received two land surveys: one was dated 1 June 1785 for 80 a. and was a narrow tract that extended up New River for about 1 1/3 miles beginning at the mouth of Buffalo Creek (B19, 1:168); the other survey was for 220 a., was dated 15 Sep 1787, and adjoined the 80-acre tract at the mouth of the creek, and extended up a north prong of Buffalo Creek (B19, 1:496). Francis received patents to these two tracts on 15 Oct 1786 and 25 Aug 1792, respectively (B22).

A fourth survey for 124 a. dated 10 Mar 1795 was for 124 a. on Buffalo Run adjoining said Farley's other land (B21, S3:77); a patent to this tract was issued to Francis on 4 Jan 1799 (B22). The fifth tract of land consisted of a 10-acre island in New River which Francis Farley as assignee of James Breckenridge entered on 26 Feb 1784; a patent was issued to him on the island tract on 30 Mar 1785 (B12).

In August 1795 the case of Samuel Pack vs. Francis Farler (sic Farley) and wife Nancy was brought up in the Greenbrier Co. Court (B26). The nature of the suit is not revealed, but it does signal the beginning of financial difficulties suffered in the late 1790's, from which he never recovered.

On 6 Apr 1799, as the result of a suit in the Greenbrier Co. Court, Francis Farley of Greenbrier Co. issued a trust deed to Samuel Pack (his brother-in-law) to secure a debt of L102 owed to Messrs. Skiles and Arbuckle (B23, A:39). Lands included in the trust deed, which was later released, were (1) the 80-acre tract on which Francis lived including his blacksmith shop and tools, (2) the 220-acre tract, and (3) the island in New River. The trust deed was witnessed by John Hutchison, Matt Farley (his half brother), and Lewis Adkins.

Three years later things financially went from bad to worse for Francis. Resulting from continued indebtedness to Arbuckle and Alexander, he was brought from jail to appear in the Monroe Co. Court on 17 Feb 1802 (B28). Only after he "delivered a schedule of his whole estate both real and personal (and) took the oath of an insolvent" was he discharged by the court. The Sheriff was then "directed to sell the property listed." While Francis Farley, Sr., was still paying taxes on his 80-acre home place in 1805 (B24), nothing is known about the ultimate disposition of the his home place.

During the 1799-1802 period Francis was involved in several other lesser suits; during this period Anne was frequently being referred to as his wife. Thomas Edgar initiated a suite against him on 16 July 1799. On 18 Feb 1801 Thomas Edgar received a judgment against Francis's property. An on-going suit and counter suit between Francis Farley and wife Anne and John Kale and wife Isabella had begun by 19 Mar 1800 and was ongoing for at least two years (B28). The result was an array of witnesses coming to court to testify; the cause of this suit was seemingly petty but must have included some aspects of trespass and at least perceived assault and battery.

The dislike by Francis Farley and James Byrnsides for each other also spawned suits and counter suits. This became notorious during this period. On 18 Feb 1800 Francis was required to enter into cognizance for a year and a day for his keeping the peace, particularly towards James Byrnsides (B28, 1799-1802:42). He was required to put up \$30 in security; two additional sureties, Matt Farley and James Pine, put up additionally \$15 each (B28). Even an apparent relative, Beverly Blankenship received a favorable verdict against Francis on 13 Mar 1802.

In 1800 Francis Farley, Sr. (sic II), was taxed for only 80 in Monroe Co. (B24), while Francis Farley, Jr. (sic III), and Drury Farley, both as assignees of Francis Sr. sic II), paid the taxes on 220 a. and 124 a., respectively. Francis Farley, Sr. (sic II), and wife Anney gifted the 124 acre tract to Drury Farley (their

son) (B24, A:121); witnesses were Matt Farley (half brother), Samuel McMullen, and Edward Farley (brother). The 220-acre tract on Buffalo Run was conveyed by Francis, Sr., and wife Anne to Francis Farley, Jr., of Montgomery Co. (B24, A:122), thus indicating that Francis, Jr. (sic III), was then residing on the west side of the New River. Having been previously conveyed by trust deed because of indebtedness (B24, A:139), the 10-acre island in New River was conveyed on 17 Apr 1809 by James Graham, trustee for Francis Farley, Sr., to James Swinney (B15, B:633).

One Francis Farley, whether Francis (1726) or his son Francis (1773) is uncertain but probably the elder, obligated himself to cut a road from the middle New River to Prestonsburg, Floyd, Ky., on the Sandy River (D2). An initial document was dated 24 Feb 1796 and was sent by John Lewis from Lewisburg to Francis Farley: "As this is in view the cutting of a road from Kentucky to the mouth of Bluestone on New River, and as some part of the way is not yet explored, Mr. Francis Farley with any other person he may think proper to assist him in viewing and marking the nearest and best way from the mouth of Bluestone to the road that is now cut from Kentucky to Sandy at Vancovers Station (or Prestons Burgh) and make return to me at Sweet Spring, and if such report should answer as a sufficient road can be had, then the subscriptions will be made and the expenses and trouble of the viewers to be paid out of such money to be raised for the above purpose."

On 5 Sep 1797 Isaac Estill, James Alexander, and John Byrnside signed a contract with Francis Farley (sic Farley) for the latter to cut such a road. Francis Farley agreed "to cut, mark, and open a bridle way, about six feet wide, so as a man may with conveniency ride, from the ford of Bigg Blue Stone, about one mile from the mouth of the same" to Prestons Burgh; this was to be preparatory to later opening a wagon road and Farley was to be reimbursed for his labor not to exceed \$300. However, on 15 May 1798 Isaac Estill and John Byrnside declared that Farley had defaulted on the contract and deemed it unnecessary to go any further.

Although no Francis Farley was listed in the 1810 Census of Monroe Co., one Francis Farley (age over 45 years) with a female aged 10-16 years residing in his household was recorded in Giles Co., which included present-day Summers Co. on the west side of New River. The tradition that Francis Farley (1726) migrated to Shawneetown, Gallatin, Ill., at an advanced age and lived to be over a hundred years of age (D1) seems probable. Court records of White Co., an adjoining county taken from Gallatin Co. in 1815, records a Francis Farley dying there about 1833, leaving a small estate of which Edward Farley, Sr., was appointed administrator with security being given by Drury Farley and Edward Farley, Jr. (B18); but no heirs were named. In March 1833 the White Co. Court had adjudged Francis Farley was old and infirm and was entirely unable to support himself; the result was it ordered sons Edward Farley, Sr., and Adam Farley to provide for his comfortable maintenance. On 9 Sep 1833 the same court further ordered the following grandchildren to take of their grandfather, who was infirm from old age: Drury Farley, Francis McMullin, John Edmonson, Silvester Farley, Celia Farley, John Farley, and John Clindull.

Historically, considerable difficulty has been met in differentiating between the four lineal generations of Francis Farley along New River. The son of Francis (I) (b. 1703) was the

father of Francis (II) (b. 1726), who was often referred to as Francis, Sr., in later years. When Francis Farley, Sr. (sic Francis II), paid two white tithes in 1797, one was for himself and the other for Francis Farley, Jr. (sic III) (B27). Francis (III) (b. 1773), often referred to as Francis, Jr., was b. 1773 reportedly in Monroe Co. Jr., married about 1795 Rachel McMullin (1780-1851), but died August 1801 in Monroe Co. (D8, application #444058). On 15 Sep 1801 the widow Rachel Farley was granted letters of administration over the estate of "Francis Farley, Jr., deceased" (B28).

The children of Francis (III) are proven to be a son Samuel, a dau. Chloe (md. William Pack), and a daughter Frances (sic IV) (md. George Mognet) (B25, dated 15 Feb 1814 and 20 June 1818; B23, F:430, (Commissioner Deed) G:117, G:430, J:22). As the widow of Francis Farley (III), Rachel Farley md. 7 Nov 1802 in Monroe Co. to Henry Ballengee (C1). That these four generations of Francis/Frances Farleys on New River between 1770 and 1810 account for all of such listings in associated county records is in agreement with those of local historians Smith and Riffe (D2).

DAR membership has been granted on potentially two Francis Farleys of New River as follows (D8):

- a. Francis Farley, Sr., b. 1726 in Va.; d. 1829 in Ill.; md. Nancy Blankenship; private, public service, Va.
- b. Francis Farley, Jr., b. abt 1745 in Va.; d. 1805 in Va.; md. Anne; public service, Va.
(Note: the corresponding DAR membership application gave Ann as the mother of Francis, b. 1773 (D6, application #444058).)

However, it is concluded that there was only one Francis Farley on New River with Revolutionary War Service and that both entries above apply to the same person and he is identified here as Francis (1726). This is consistent with the conclusion that Francis's wife was randomly using either Nancy or Anne as her given name, suggesting her full name may have been Nancy Anne Blankenship. It is also noted that on the marriage bond for Adam Farley (b. abt 1765) the given name of his mother was recorded as Nancy (C1). In summary dated records have given the name of Francis's wife chronologically as follows: 1765, Nancy; 1773, Ann; 1795, Nancy; 1800-2, Anne.

JOHN, b. 1728; probably died on New River shortly after 1800; apparently never married and had children, although the improbable names of John, Matthew, and Booker have been raised with no direct or associative evidence given (D1). In fact, no proven relationship has been made for John with any other Farley. Because John has never been found as the principal in any courthouse record, he has remained elusive and little is known about him. Yet, his being contemporary and associated with Francis, Thomas, and Matthew Farley does seem to substantiate the tradition that he was in fact another brother (D1). Known and probable references to him include the following: (1) In 1774 John resided on the west side of New River, is recorded in the militia records there, and then fought in the Battle of Point Pleasant, all in conjunction with Francis Farley, Thomas Farley, and Samuel Pack (D3, D11, D12).

(2) John Farler--along with Francis Farler, Matt Farler, and Samuel Pack--were among those on 20 Nov 1781 opposing a proposed road in then Greenbrier Co. (D18, 2:102-4). (3) On 4 May 1784 a

survey of 400 a. on both sides of New River under Greenbrier Co. jurisdiction, entered by right of settlement, was made to William Toney as assignee of John Farley (B21, p. 152). (4) John was a taxpayer in Greenbrier Co. in 1783, 1792, 1797, paying taxes on minimal personal property but owning no land (B27, B30). (5) On 18 Feb 1800 John Farley, along with Matt Farley and Samuel Pack, was ordered to view and mark a road from William Lafferty's to opposite the mouth of Bluestone (B28).

(6) John Farley's land (claim?) in a deed dated 3 Jan 1803 was described as being located on the waters of Indian Creek adjoining lands then being purchased by Matthew Farley (B23, A:445). (7) "At the foot of the hill [i.e. south of Matt Farley's place] was where my grandfather's [i.e. Matt Farley's] brother John Farley lived and died. After that both Uncle Joseph and Uncle John Farley [i.e. sons of Matt, Sr.] lived there by turns until they moved to Indiana" (D2, from letter written by Joseph Gore on 28 Mar 1890). (Note: since Johns obtaining warranty title to land has never been documented, it is probable he lived on part of Matt's land holdings during his last years.)

THOMAS, SR., b. 1730; d. 1796 on Walker Creek, Giles (then Montgomery) Co., Va.; bur. Walker Creek; md. abt 1754 to JUDITH CLAY, b. abt 1734 and d. after 1809, probable dau. of Charles Clay and wife Sarah. Children (Farley)--oldest children b. in Bedford (now Franklin) Co., Va., and at least three youngest b. in present-day Summers Co., W. Va.: Henry (md. Sally Chitwood), Rebecca (md. John Thompson), Thomas, Jr. (md. Patsy Lester), Forest (md. Mary Munsey), William (md. Elizabeth Thompson, Clay (md. Letty Carter), Jesse (md. Elizabeth Davidson), Judith (Judy) (md. David Nieswonger), John (md. Jane Hammond), and Chloe (md. Samuel Dillon).

A marker erected near the mouth of Sugar Run near Bane, Giles, Va, records the following for "Thomas Farley, Sr., Revolutionary War Soldier, Buried 1796,

- 1758. French and Indian War
- 1774. Battle of Point Pleasant
- 1776. Erected Farley's Fort
- 1778. Fought campaign under General McIntosh (around Fort Pitt)
- 1779. Indian scout under Captain Patton" (D4).

Thomas was recorded in the Bedford Co. Militia under John Lewis in 1758 (D5); this was one of the units that assembled in Albemarle Co. and marched to New River (now in Summers Co.) to intercept Indian raids. It is believed that he was probably in Capt. Thomas Lewis's garrison of 50 men in 1755 that constructed a stockade in the central part of Culbertson's Bottom (D1). One is confident that he helped man this fort or at least its replacement and thus had ample opportunity to become acquainted with the surrounding vicinity. Thomas, Sr., never applied for a Revolutionary War pension; it was his son Thomas Farley, Jr., that applied for and received a pension (D6, No. W7244).

The pension application of one Henry Skaggs of Grayson, Co., Ky., dated 24 Sep 1832, verifies one term of service for Thomas, Sr. (D6). This application included the statement that about 1780 he and Thomas Farlan (sic Farley) were scouting Indians at the mouth of Cole River, having gone there from Culbertson's Fort. After being frequently called into military duty from 1758 to 1780, Thomas, Sr.'s, military services apparently ended in 1779, at

which time he was an Indian scout under Capt. Henry Patton and Col. William Preston (D1).

Before settling on Culbertson's Bottom along New River, Thomas resided and was a landowner along Blackwater River in present-day Franklin Co., Va., but then principally in Bedford Co. On 25 June 1765 Thomas Farlor (sic Farley) bought of Will Mead (both parties of Bedford Co.) for L20 a tract of 185 a. on both sides of Blackwater River (B9, 3:135); and on 26 July he bought an adjoining tract of 358 a. on the north side of Blackwater from the same party for L30 (B9, 5:104). On 3 June 1773 Thomas, being indebted for L52 19s, conveyed a deed of trust to John Wilkinson & Co. to the 185-acre tract located on both sides of Blackwater River "where said Farley now lives" (B9, 5:279).

It was not until after his brief residence in present-day Summers Co., W. Va., on Culbertson's bottom (see later) and subsequent removal to Giles Co. (then Montgomery Co.), that Thomas disposed of his Bedford Co. lands. As a resident of Montgomery Co. the Bedford Co. lands were sold through three deeds dated 6 Feb 1779. The 185-acre tract was sold by Thomas to James Burns of Bedford Co. for L200 (B9, 6:214). The 385-acre tract was sold by Thomas and wife Juda (sic Judith) in two tracts: 258 a. adjoining James Burns and Jesse Clay to William Clay of Bedford Co. for L50 (B9, 6:215) and 100 a. to Thomas Marcum for L35 (B9, 6:216). Although its status is otherwise unknown, Thomas Farley also received a land grant on 8 July 1780 for 327 a. in Bedford Co. on the south side of Blackwater River (B2, A:606).

Thomas Farley, Sr., owned, bought, and sold numerous tracts in present-day Giles Co., Va. When personal property and land taxlists were begun in Virginia in 1782, Thomas Farley, Sr., was recorded in Montgomery Co. paying one white tithe (B10) and taxes on 270 a. (B11). This tract of land, now given as containing 260 a., was conveyed to Thomas Farlor (sic Farley) of Montgomery Co. by William Thompson, executor of James Patton, deceased, of Augusta Co., Va., on 13 Nov 1784 for L70 (B15, A:347-8); this tract was described as being located on Walker Creek of New River and had been patented on 23 Dec 1779 to William Thompson and William Preston.

By 1790 Thomas was paying taxes on five tracts in Montgomery Co. (now Giles Co.) of 270, 200, 350, 340, and 40 a. (B11). Land grants made out to him in 1785 and 1786 were for 300 a. on Pine Run, 350 and 300 a. on Sugar Run, 200 a. on Big Spring Branch of Walker's Creek, and 330 a. on Sugar Run (B12). Giles Co. was created from Montgomery Co. in 1806, and Judah Farley and Thomas Farley's executors paid taxes on three slaves and a total of 900 a. (B13, B14).

In his will dated 31 May 1796 and probated Oct 1796 in Montgomery Co. (B16, B:225), Thomas Farley conveyed to his wife Judith or Judy three slaves and all of his personal estate and bequeathed to his sons such lands as he had previously given them. After the executors named in the will, Gordon Cloyd and John Kirk, refused to serve, the court appointed the widow and son Jesse as executors. The names of the children of Thomas Farley are documented in a deed dated 18 May 1805 (B15, D:242) in which the heirs conveyed 300 a. on Richland Creek to John Walker, a prior purchaser; the heirs included sons Henry, Thomas, Forest, William, Jesse, John, and Clay and daughters Chloe (wife of Samuel Dillon),

Rebekah (wife of John Thompson), and Judy (wife of David Nicewander).

The widow Judy Farley on 11 Mar 1809 sold to Jacob and John Peck for \$200 her dower in "the home place of the said Thomas Farley in his lifetime lying in the County of Giles....on Walkers Creek a branch of New River" (B17, A:157). Although the acreage was not given, it was described as the tract of land on which she and her son Jesse were then living with boundaries including Walkers Creek on the north west and also Rye Hollow and Grassy Ridge. The homestead and grave site of Thomas Farley, Sr., were both apparently located about one mile northeast of Bane on the East side of Walker Creek (D1).

Francis, Sr., md. (2) abt 1754 ELIZABETH CROSTIC, b. 19 Apr 1718, reportedly in North Carolina; d. 29 Oct 1797 in Summers (then Greenbrier) Co., W. Va.; bur. Matt Farley farm. Children (Farley)--both b. probably on Blackwater, Franklin (then Bedford), Va.:

*MARY, b. abt 1757; d. 1823-1830 in now Summers Co.; bur. old Pack Cem., Summers Co.; md. about 1776, probably at Fort Farley, to SAMUEL PACK (1755). (Refer to Family 112-113 in Pack Ancestral Line (Part II).)

MATTHEW (SR.), b. 29 Oct 1759; d. 27 Feb 1837 in Franklin Twp., Henry, Ind.; md. 3 July 1785 in Greenbrier (now Monroe) Co., W. Va., to ESTHER McMULLEN. Esther, dau. of Edward McMullen and wife Sarah Robinson, was b. 14 Feb 1764 at Sweet Springs, Greenbrier, W. Va.; d. 3 Apr 1838 in Franklin Twp., Henry, Ind. Children (Farley)--all b. in Monroe (then Summers) Co., W. Va.: Elizabeth (md. Lemuel Jarrell), Sarah (Sally) (md. James Gore), Esther (md. John Abbott), Matthew, Jr. (md. Jane Harvey), James (md. Nancy Paul), Joseph (md. Rebecca Paul), John (md. Mary (Polly) Crawford), Nancy (md. Joel Cook), and Jane (Jenny) (md. (1) Henry Gore; md. (2) William C. Gore).

Matthew (shortened to Matt) came to New River with his parents as a teenager, being only 16 years of age in 1775, the probable date Fort Farley was built by his half-brother Thomas. Some historical enthusiasts seem to forget that Matt was almost a full generation younger than his older half-brothers. Thus, the tradition (sic tall tale) of Farley's Fort being "established by Captain Matt Farley," a famous Captain in the Revolutionary War (D9) is only a fable. Although gaining experience as an Indian scout near the end of the war and afterwards, he served no other activity in the Revolutionary War (D2). Although his acceptance as a Revolutionary War ancestor may be borderline, this status has been tendered him by DAR (D8) as follows:

Matthew Farley, b. 29 Oct 1759; d. abt 15 Apr 1837 in Ind.; md. Esther McMullin; spy, Va.

Mathew Farler (sic Farley was appointed a captain in the Greenbrier Co. Militia on 29 Apr 1788. His area was the lower portion of Hugh Caperton's Co. and extended down New River and up Indian Creek (B26); his length of service in this capacity is unknown. At a later date, i.e. on 26 Dec 1792, one of those signing a petition protesting being paid for militia service by someone other than Caperton was Matt Farley. Also, on 27 May 1793 Matthew Farley was appointed a scout (along with his nephews Francis, Drewry, and Edward) by J. Steele for service in Capt. Hugh Caperton's Co.; and on 26 Jan 1794 he was paid for 153 days of service as a scout (D10).

At the organization of Monroe Co. on 22 May 1799, he was appointed one of the captains in the Monroe Co. militia; however, he had resigned from the militia position by 18 Feb 1800 (B28). Matt was appointed a gentleman justice for Monroe Co. on 20 Aug 1799 and qualified on 15 Oct 1799. However, on 21 July 1801 he resigned as a justice of Monroe Co. (B28).

It is of note that Matthew Farley and Francis Farley (half brothers and neighbors on New River) were appointed surveyors on 16 Mar 1785 of the road from William Lafferty's place at the mouth of Indian Creek and up said creek (B26). Years later on 18 Feb 1800 he along with John Farley [presumably his half brother] and Samuel Pack [his brother-in-law] were appointed to view and mark the best road from William Laferty's place (at the mouth of Indian Creek) to the crossing ford of New River near the mouth of Bluestone, i.e. along the northeast side of New River (B28).

Because of the tradition that Matt's parents, Francis Farley and wife Elizabeth Crostic, lived their last years on Matt's farm, it has been referred to as the "old Farley homestead" or "original Farley homesite" (D2). Matt's homesite was located on the east side of New River at the mouth of Matt's Run. Matt's farm was the next farm upriver from his brother Francis (1726); the location was about midway between the mouths of Buffalo Creek and Indian Creek. Here was located the burial place of Matt's parents. W. A. Riffe, in letters sent by him to J. K. Farley, Jr., in 1945 (D2), has written that the graves were located side by side "with crude stones for head markers" and that James Dickinson, the later owner of the farm, "showed me the outlines of the two old graves in his barn lot that I am sure are those in question." (Note: these same grave sites were shown to me by Aubrey O. Smith in the early 1970's--JFV).

Matthew Farley made an entry of 300 a. located between his half brother Francis's entry, both made on 8 June 1782, and lands of William Laferty (B20, p. 57); a second entry made 18 Apr 1786 was located at a spring on the right hand fork of Farlie's Run, a branch of New River (B20, p. 245). Based on these entries, a key survey made for Matthew Farlor (sic Farley) on 6 May 1784 was for 150 a. adjoining William Lafferty's land, to which Matt was entitled by right of settlement made in 1778 (B19, 1:91). This survey was made shortly after the Farley family left Fort Farley to settle on the east side of New River and contained the farmstead. This survey was about 1.6 miles long, averaged only .2 mile wide, but expanded to fit into the mouth of Matt's Run. A 100-acre survey was made for Matt on the headquarters of Matt's Run in April 1786 (B19, 1:283).

Two additional surveys, dated 8 Mar 1792 and 24 Sep 1794, each for 50 a. were nearby (B21, S3:47, 72). After the purchase of additional tracts in the vicinity, the list of tracts on which Matthew paid taxes in 1812 were (1) 150 a. on New River by William Lougherty (sic Lafferty), the home place, (2) 50 a. adjoining above, (3) 36 a. on the ridge adjoining the 150-acre tract, (4) 131 a. on New River below Bull Falls, (5) 50 a. adjoining the 131-acre tract, (6) 70 a. on Lone Tree Branch of New River adjoining Lemuel Jarrel, and (6) 97 a. on Buffalo Run. By 1830 when Matthew and wife Esther were recorded in the 1830 Census of Monroe Co., they had sold off much of their New River lands, mostly in small tracts to members of their family and neighbors; Matt's home place eventually was sold to a son-in-law James Gore,

By 1831 Matt and Elizabeth and many of their family had moved to Henry Co., Ind. In his will dated 27 Feb 1837 and probated 15 Apr 1837 in Henry Co., Ind. (B31), Matt Farley, Sr., distributed remaining property in Monroe Co. and Henry Co. to members of his family and directed son John to maintain his mother. His farm in Henry Co. consisting of 75 a. (W1/2NE1/4, Sec. 17, T16E) was conveyed to his wife Ester for life, with remainder rights to his son Joseph. A tract of land in Monroe Co. was conveyed to his daughter Sarah Gore. (Sarah and husband James Gore had previously purchased Matt's home place on New River.) Matt's sons Matt and Joseph were appointed executors of his estate.

Francis, Sr., was b. south of the James River in what was then Henrico Co. but since 1749 Chesterfield Co.; here he spent approximately the first 55 years of his life. It is believed that both of the spouses of Francis, Sr., were from this same general area, but their parentage is still unknown. The first documented reference to Francis was in 1736 when he was taxed at one levy on personal property, with a notation that he also had a "store debt" (B1). Although he apparently owned no land until 1749, he presumably was a farmer on rented land until then, raising tobacco as a principal crop. On 5 Sep 1749 he was granted by the Crown a tract of 376 a. on Piney Fork of Parish's Branch in Henrico (now Chesterfield) Co. (B2); adjoining landowners were given as Henry Hudson, Farley Lepraid, and Peter Hudson.

Reference was made on 15 Apr 1752 of his keeping a "tippling house" in Chesterfield Co. (B3, p. 110); and in 1752 he was recorded as serving on a jury (B3, p. 197). He was still in Chesterfield Co. on 4 May 1753 when he witnessed a baptism in Bristop Parish of Elizabeth Rucker, dau. of Robert and Joanna (Va. Mag. Hist., 4:363). However, by 1758 he had become a resident of Cumberland Co., Va. On 28 Mar 1758 Francis Farley of Cumberland Co. sold his 376-acre land grant on Parish's Branch in Chesterfield Co. to Thomas Yuille of the latter place (B4, 3:262). The sale was made for L65, and the deed was witnessed by Alexander Mackie, Thomas Donald, and William Duiguid.

Conveyed to his "son Francis" by the will of John Farley, Jr., his father, dated 6 Apr 1754 (B5, 1:200) were two slaves: a "negor Dickboy" (following a life right to his daughter Mary Womack) and "a negro wench Lucy" and her increase. He was still a resident of Cumberland Co. in 1763 when Francis Farler and Matthew Farler (presumably his brother) of Chesterfield Co. sold the negro slave Lucy. The bill of sale was dated 1 Apr 1763 and recorded in Chesterfield Co. in July 1763, and conveyance was made to John Mosby of Cumberland Co. for L120 (B4:4:450); both grantors signed their surname as "Farley," and George Cogbill, Edmund Graves, and Mary Doode witnessed the bill of sale.

Prior to 1767 the Blackwater River area of present-day Franklin Co. became the the interim home of at least some if not all of the members of the Francis Farley, Sr., family. This relatively short Blackwater River, in distinction from another river of this same name in southeastern Virginia, heads in western Franklin Co., flows east to west through the county, and empties into the Staunton (or Roanoke) River at the east boundary of the county. Franklin Co. was established in 1786; that part north of the Blackwater River had been part of Bedford Co. since 1753, that part south of the river had been part of Henry Co. since 1776, Pittsylvania Co. since 1767, and Halifax Co. since 1752.

Thomas Farley, son of Francis, Sr., was a known resident of the Blackwater area as early as 1758 and owned land on both sides of the river as late as 1779 (see previous). Thomas's younger half siblings, Mary and Matthew Farley, are often reported as being born at Blackwater; but they may have been born in Cumberland Co. or even Chesterfield Co. and came to the Blackwater as young children. Twelve Generations of Farleys (D1), a widely quoted reference

on Farley family origins, has concluded that Francis Farley, Sr., had settled on the Blackwater "in the valley at the base of the Blue Ridge" about 1749; but it appears, considering the 1758 and 1763 Cumberland Co. connections, that Francis, Sr., may not have come until around 1765.

Three sources document a Francis Farley in Pittsylvania Co. between 1767 and 1771. One Francis Farley was a tithable there in 1767, at which time he was processioned and tithed by a neighbor Hugh Ennis (D1). Secondly, on 15 Mar 1769 Francis Farlen (sic Farley) witnessed a deed from William Mead to Stephen Heard for 52 a. on Mead's Branch (B6, 1:271). Thirdly, Francis Farley on 17 May 1771 sold one black mare to Stephen Heard, Jr. (B6, 2:372). These references may well have referred to Francis, Sr., but one or all might also have referred to his son Francis, Jr.

The next settlement of the ancestral Farley line was on New River in present-day Summers Co., W. Va. The location was on Culbertson's Bottom, later known as Crump's Bottom, on the southwest side of New River (see New River locator map included elsewhere). This narrow bottom, never more than a half mile wide, extended for some five miles along New River (now Bluestone Reservoir); and early-day conflicts over its ownership denoted its value as prime agricultural bottom land. Andrew Culbertson of Pennsylvania made first settlement on Culbertson's Bottom in 1753-4, but was compelled by fear of the Indians to leave it. He then sold his claims to Samuel Culbertson, probably a brother, who also lived there but briefly to improve the claim. In 1755 he also was compelled to leave the area because of Indian danger (B7).

The bottom remained mostly unoccupied until 1772 when Thomas, son of Francis Sr., made his settlement there. In 1775 Thomas Farlow (sic Farley) acquired the settlement rights of two men named Butcher and Gatliff to this tract of 355 a. He then purchased the land from the Loyal Company, it being part of their original land grant, had a survey made of the tract, and took a certificate to obtain a grant as soon as one could be issued. Thomas Farley provided affidavit in Greenbrier Co. that he had first seen the small improvements with a cabin in Culbertson Bottom in 1762 (D2, as verified by Aubrey O. Smith). He then made his application for a survey based on his settlement there in 1772 (B7; also Wythe's Chancery Reports to Va.; I:150). When the survey was made on 31 Mar 1775, this based on an "order of council" dated 16 Dec 1773, the 335-acre tract was recorded as located in Fincastle Co., "being the place called Culverson's Bottom" (sic Culbertson's Bottom) and included an island in New River (B8, A:218).

However, in 1778 before obtaining a patent Thomas Farley sold for L300 his right of improvement to James Byrnsides, who exhibited his claim in 1782. The sale of this bottom by Thomas and his subsequent removal to Giles Co., was in large measure from fear of Indians, but Thomas may have also anticipated problems in getting clear title. Subsequent litigation ensued between the Culbertsons through their representative Andrew Reid and James Byrnsides. Although the Culbertson's claimed they had never relinquished their claim to the bottom and had made attempts to return to it, the courts eventually awarded title to James Byrnside. The Commissioners allowed him 400 acres, including the said 355 acres, for his settlement together with and adjoining 600-acre pre-emption (B7).

It was on the lower (northwest) tip of Culbertson Bottom that Thomas Farley constructed Farley's Fort in the mid 1770's, probably 1774 or 1775. This private fortification consisted of a large log house constructed to resist Indian attacks. It is believed to have stood about 200 yards below (i.e. west) of the mouth of Tom's Run (sic Tom Farley's Run) and immediately above Bull Falls. It is believed that all of Thomas's brothers and their families as well as Farley, Sr., himself, his second wife Elizabeth, and their two unmarried children, Mary and Matthew, joined Thomas at Fort Farley (D1). In the military affairs letter sent by Michael Woods to Col. Wm. Preston dated

29 May 1774 (D3, p. 397-8), it was documented that Thomas, Francis, and John Farley [brothers] and Samuel Pack [brother-in-law] were residing on the west side of New River at that time. Francis Farley, Sr., has never been found in the public records of the New River area; and it is presumed that this resulted from his being of advanced age and not being active in business affairs (D2).

Thomas sold his rights to Culbertson's Bottom to Byrnsides in 1779 (B7). In his Revolutionary War pension application dated 8 Nov 1833, one James Caldwell declared that "in the spring of the year 1778, I served a tour of duty of 15 days pursuing a party of hostile Indians who had burned Farlow's Fort in Culbertson's Bottom on New River" (D6, #W9770); this tour had been under Captain Archibald Woods of Greenbrier Co. Thus, it was undoubtedly around this time that the Farleys all moved across New River to the east side into then Greenbrier Co.

Thomas soon moved his family upriver to now Giles Co., Va., and settled on Sugar Run and Walker's Creek. It is possible that the other Farleys may have also gone to Walker's creek briefly to evade the Indian threat of the late 1770's, but it seems more likely that they fortified up at the forts on the east side of New River whenever Indian attack seemed imminent. As soon as the Indian threat had receded, Matt Farley then made long-term settlement below the mouth of Indian Creek with his half-brother John Farley nearby; Francis, Jr., settled immediately downriver at the mouth of Buffalo Run; and Samuel Pack and wife Mary nee Farley further still further downriver in the vicinity of the mouth of Bluestone River. However, after leaving Fort Farley and before moving to Giles Co. it is apparent that Thomas also had a claim in the vicinity of his brothers in now Summers Co. but then in Greenbrier Co.: on 27 June 1789 a survey of 219 a. on New River was made for Henry McDannell by certificate for 400 a. as assignee of James Williams assignee of Michael Woods assignee of Thos. Farley assignee of Henry O. Harrow (B21, p. 234).

The vital dates and most of the relationships of members of the immediate family of Frances Farley (1755) have not been documented from original records but rather on close associations and family tradition and follow those given by Jesse Kelso Farley, Jr. (D1). Cited by the latter author as his sources were "records copied from family Bible of James Gore by Joseph Elmer Goar, Kansas City, Mo." Also cited, particularly for earlier generations, were the records of Randolph W. Farley, Nashua, N. H. (deceased). The exact contents of these two sources are now unknown, and Farley (D1) annotated in that "the parentage, marriages, and children have not been fully confirmed by public record so far available." For example, the years of birth given for the three sons of Francis (1755) by his first marriage and the two year spacing of years between suggest these were only estimates. W. A. Riffe (in D2) has suggested that Frances (1755) was more apt to have died in 1781 than 1791 and is credited with having found the name of Francis's first wife as Nancy Crostic among family sources.

Differentiating between what is accurate and probable from that which is improbable and pure fiction in the greater family of Francis Farley (1755) has been difficult. Nevertheless, it is concluded that the listing of names and vital data as given above are the best that can not be made. It is acknowledged that while Farley (D1) gave "Booker, b. 1733, migrated to Georgia" as another possible son of Frances, that possibility has been deleted here as improbable and lacking any associative evidence.

It is well documented that three sons of Francis Farley (1755), Francis (1726), Thomas, and John, along with his-son-in-law Samuel Pack were active scouts and militiamen during the Revolutionary War but also participated in the Battle of Point Pleasant (D12). (For further details refer to "Military Records" in the write-up of Family 112-113, Samuel Pack and Mary Farley.) Their participation in the Battle of Point Pleasant is also documented in two

other references (D3, D11). On 11 Oct 1777 Francis Farler (i.e. Francis b. 1726), Thomas Farler, Sr., Thomas Farler, Jr., and Henry Farler were administered the oath of allegiance in Montgomery Co., Va., by James Robertson (D17).

With Matthew Farley, Sr., son of Francis (1755) not being born until 1759, it has become virtually impossible to justify many of the things attributed to him by various early-day authors. This apparently gave rise to the proposal that there was one "older Captain Matt Farley on New River," and this has been perpetuated down through the years (D9, 1908; D1, 1943; D14, 1991-4). However, following the lead of Smith and Riffe (D2) [as well as many contacts this author (JFV) had with Aubrey O. Smith during the 1970's], the proposition of an older Matt Farley being on New River prior to and during Revolutionary War times is deemed pure fiction. This is based on failure to locate even one single document showing such an existence. The lead to this "older Matt Farley" tradition may have stemmed from a dual listing of "Matt. Farley" in the substitute published in lieu of the lost 1790 Census of Virginia (D13). This double listing, both in Greenbrier Co., undoubtedly resulted in compositing across years the annual personal property taxlists for the years 1783-1786. Reference to the original personal property taxlists, these begun by county in Virginia in 1782, show only a single Matthew Farley listed each year between 1782 and 1797 (B27).

An even greater problem has been determining the parentage of Mary Farley (1757), wife of Samuel Pack (1755). (Note: the calculated birth year for Mary as 1757 is based on the assumption of she being 20 years of age at the birth of her first son John in 1777.) The most common tradition has been essentially that given by Miller (D9, p. 449): "Samuel Pack, the original ancestor of the generations of this region, married a daughter of Captain Farley, a famous Indian scout and brother [sic uncle although about the same age] of Drewry Farley, from whom the present generation of Farley in this county descended. The other child of Captain Mat Farley [presumably referring to Matthew Farley (1759)] emigrated while a young man to Indiana." This theory has been perpetuated by writers for the Summers Co. Hist. Soc. (D15), by one Pack Family historian (D16), one New River author (D14), and others. Since the only early documented Matthew Farley on New River was b. 1759--excepting his son Matthew, Jr., who was not born until 1792--and his birth year being equivalent to that of Mary, this theory necessarily required the belief in an older Matthew Farley.

Other theories have been that Mary Farley, wife of Samuel Pack, was (1) a daughter of Drewry Farley of Pipestem, (2) a sister of Drewry Farley thus dau. of Francis Farley, Jr. (1726), or even a daughter of the elusive John Farley, one of the original Farley brothers on middle New River. Family tradition without documentation credits Francis Farley, Jr., as having a daughter Mary or Polly; but this may have arisen as a need to accommodate one theory that Samuel Pack's wife Mary was a daughter of Francis, Jr. There was a Mary Farley cited by the Monroe Co. Court on 18 Mar 1800 for having illegitimate offspring (B28); this might have been a daughter of Francis Farley, Jr. (1726) since no other probably connection has been found for her. Also, there was a Mary Farley who, along with Letty Farley (daughter-in-law of Francis, Jr.), was a witness for Francis, Jr., in the case of Sarah Kale, Infant, by John Kale Her Father vs. (in trespass and assault and battery) Francis Farley and Anne, His Wife (B28), probably a nuisance suit.

However, being followed here is the conclusion of Smith and Riffe (D2) that Mary was a full sister of Matthew Farley (1769) and thus a daughter of Francis Farley Sr. (1703) by his second wife Elizabeth Crostic. This conclusion is accepted here and is verified by a letter written 28 Mar 1890 by Joseph Goar of Morristown, Minn., to his daughter Emily White of Windfall, Indiana (D2), which included the following statement: "Packs were cousins to my mother. Old Samuel, father of those I have named, married my Grandfather

Matt Farley's sister." Thus, discarding the "older Matt Farley" theory and properly placing Matt (1759) and his full sister Mary (1757) as children of Francis Sr. and wife Elizabeth clears up a serious problem in the New River Farley lineage.

(B1, B2, B3, B4, B5, B6, B7, B8, B9, B10, B11, B12, B13, B14, B15, B16, B17, B18, B19, B20, B21, B22, B23, B24, B25, B26, B27, B28, B30, B31, C1, D1, D2, D3, D4, D5, D6, D7, D8, D9, D10, D11, D12, D13, D14, D15, D16, D17, D18)

FAMILY 452-453

JOHN FARLEY, JR. (1670) and ELIZABETH ARCHER (1674)

JOHN FARLEY, JR., son of John Farley, Jr. (1648) and wife Mary (1652), was b. 6 Apr 1670 in Henrico Co., Va.; d. 1754 in Dale Parish, Chesterfield, Va.; md. abt 1700 in Chesterfield (then Henrico) Co. to ELIZABETH ARCHER of Conjurors Neck, Chesterfield, Va., b. abt 1674, d. 1761 in Dale Parish, dau. of John Archer (1644) and wife Elizabeth Royall (1648). Children (Farley)--all b. Chesterfield (then Henrico) Co.:

- JOHN, b. 1702; d. prior 10 Sep 1775 in Dale Parish; md. MARY WILLETT. No children. John (III) probably spent his entire live in what is now Chesterfield Co., Va. John paid taxes on four levys and 140 a. in Henrico Co. in 1736 (B1). In his will dated 10 Sep 1775, John provided for his wife Mary and divided the remainder of his estate among four sons of his brother William Farley, i.e. Peter, William, Daniel, and Stewart (B5, 2:257); he appointed executors Daniel Farley, Stewart Farley, and Joseph Bass and his will was witnessed by Thomas Saddler, William Beasley, and Isham Farmer.
- *FRANCIS, SR., b. 25 Oct 1703; d. 22 Oct 1791 in Summers (then Greenbrier) Co., W. Va.; md. (1) NANCY WHITLOW; md. (2) ELIZABETH CROSTIC. (Refer to Family 226-227 for further details.
- MARY, b. 1707; d. prior 23 July 1750 in Chesterfield Co.; resided in present-day Chesterfield Co.; md. THOMAS WOMACK, who d. prior 1736. Children (Womack)--probably all b. now Chesterfield Co.: Francis, Thomas, Sarah (md. Rice), Mary (md. Man), Martha (md. Roberts), Judy (md. Booth), Abram, Isham, and William. In 1736, as a widow, Mary Womack paid 50 lbs. in taxes in 1736 in Henrico Co., Va. In her will dated 23 July 1750 and probated in Chesterfield Co. (D19), Mary Womack made reference to the above children.
- WILLIAM, b. 1709; md. SARAH. Known children (Farley): Peter, William, John (md. Sarah), and Stewart (B5, 2:257). William Farlowe (sic Farley) was granted 137 a. in Henrico (now Chesterfield) Co. on 17 Aug 1725 (B2, 12:287); the tract was located on the south side of James River adjoining Martha Blankinship, said Farlowe's other land, and Charles Clay. He was then taxed on three levys and 237 a. in Henrico Co. in 1736 (B1). The grant of 487 a. in Amelia Co. on Flat Creek dated 25 July 1756 made to one William Farley was probably also to him (B2, 24:237).
- SARAH, b. 1711; md. ROBERT THOMPSON. Children (Thompson): Drury (md. Eleanor Oliver), Isham (md. Mary Ann Oliver), John Farley, Robert III, Sarah (md. Brown), Peter, Elizabeth, William (md. Mary Wells), Mary (md. Bartlett Davis), and Mattie (wife of James Watkins (D1, D7).
- JAMES, b. 1710; d. abt 1779 in Chesterfield Co.; md. SARAH BALDEVIERE. Children (Farley): James, Henry, David, Edward, Betty (md. Hopkins), and other daughters not named. James was taxed on three levys and 100 a. in Henrico Co. in 1736 (B1). On 12 Feb 1742 he received a grant of 275 a. in Henrico (now Chesterfield) Co. on the south side of James River on Nicesams Branch (B2, 20:467). In

his will dated 19 Feb 1779 and probated in Chesterfield Co., James listed his children and appointed his son Henry and Benjamin Hopkins as executors (B5).

JOSEPH, b. 1712; d. 1761 Chesterfield Co.; md. (name of wife unknown). Children (Farley): John, Forrest, Mary, and Joseph (md. Mary Ellington) (D1). Joseph paid taxes on three levys and 100 a. in Henrico Co. in 1736 (B1). On 12 Jan 1746 Joseph was granted 44 a. in Henrico Co. the south side of Proctor's Creek (B2, 25:249). In his will dated 3 May 1761 and probated in Chesterfield Co., he named children Forrest, Mary, and Joseph but mentioned no wife; he appointed sons Forrest and Joseph as executors (B5, 1:359) Land grants on West's Creek in Amelia Co. to one Joseph Farley for 500 a. on 15 Mar 1735 and 400 a. on 15 Aug 1737 may have been to Joseph of John (1670) (B2, 17:22, 386).

MATTHEW, b. 1714; d. 1792 in Powhatan Co., Va.; md. (name of wife unknown). Children (Farley): Matthew (md. Obedience Elam), Phoebe (md. Mr. Booth), Mary (md. Mr. Wilson), Judith (md. Mr. Watkins), and Sarah (md. Hatcher). Matt. Farley was taxed on one levy and 100 a. in Henrico Co. in 1736 (B1). In his will dated 17 Sep 1792 and probated 16 Feb 1792 in Powhatan Co., Va. (B32, 1:244), Matthew Farley of Powhatan referred to the children of his deceased daughter Sarah Hatcher and his daughter-in-law Obedience Farley and the children of his deceased son Matthew (Jr.) Matthew Farley, Jr., was convicted of killing a slave by whipping and was executed in 1789 (D10, Vol. IV).

HENRY, b. 1716; d. abt 1767 in Halifax Co., Va.; md. MARY. Children (Farley): Mary (md. Mr. Burton), George (md. Mary), Elizabeth (md. Wade), Prudence (md. Roger Scott), John James, Martha (md. Andrew Wade) Josiah (md. Hannah), and Moses. Henry Farley received 400 a. in Henrico (now Chesterfield) Co. by grant in 1746; he and his wife Mary of Amelia Co. sold this land on 3 May 1754 to John Hatchett (D19). Henry received land grants on Amelia Co. on Flatt Creek of 318 a. on 20 Aug 1740 and 902 a. on 30 June 1742 (B2, 19:733, 20:416). In his will dated 23 Aug 1767 and probated 21 July 1768 in Halifax Co. (B33, 0:243), Henry Farley named eight children and conveyed the home plantation to his son John.

PETER, b. 19 Apr 1718; d. abt 1756 in Amelia Co.; md. DRUSILLA TURPIN, d. abt 1785. Children (Farley): Matthew, Jeremiah, and Erabella. Peter was granted on 15 Mar 1735 a tract of 250 a. in Amelia Co. adjoining Joseph Farley and George Stegall (B2, 17:19). In his will dated 22 Aug 1756 and probated 24 Mar 1757 in Amelia Co. (B34, 1:124), Peter devised his interests in lands in Chesterfield Co. [probably referring to remainderman rights in the farm of his father] to his two sons, both under age, and appointed his wife, her brother Henry Turpin, and Joseph Farley, Jr. [probably a nephew] as executors. In her will dated 4 Dec 1784 and proved 27 July 1793 in Amelia Co (B34, 5:156), his widow Drusilla recorded their three children.

Although John Farley, Jr., may have first lived on leased land at Blackwater in Charles City (now Price George) Co., his first owned plantation was reportedly of unproven acreage conveyed about 1692 to him by his father, the land then being in Henrico Co. but later falling within Chesterfield Co. (D1). John Farley, Jr., on 15 June 1696 was conveyed by James Akin, Jr., and wife Sarah and James Akin, Sr., and wife Ann a tract of 80 a. in Varina Parish, Henrico Co., adjoining Robert Russell, Butterwood Bottom, Flintons, etc. (B35, 5:654). The deed was witnessed by John Farley, Sr., and Nicholas Dison.

On 24 Apr 1703 John Farlar (sic Farley), Jr., was granted 471 a. in Henrico Co. (later Chesterfield Co.) for transporting 10 persons into the

colonies (B2, 9:528); this land was located on the south side of James River on the forks of Proctor's Creek. After coming to America such indentured servants as had been transported by John, Jr., served those paying their transportation for a definite period of time. Two such indentured servants serving John Farley, Jr., were apparently Nicholas Partridge, adjudged 10 years of age on 1 Feb 1698 (B35, 3:218) and William Robinson, adjudged 12 years of age in Aug 1699 (B35, 3:230). These indentured servants, along with the numerous negro slaves owned by John, Jr., were involved in producing tobacco, the chief product from his farms (D1).

In the following year of 1704 John Farlar, Jr., paid taxes in Henrico Co. on 551 a. (total of 471 a. and 80 a.) (B35). This combined land acreage was held until early 1733 when John, Jr., divided it amongst five sons as follows: (1) to son James 22 Feb 1732/3 100 acres, it being "the land I live on" adjoining James's other land and his brother Joseph, (2) to son John on 3 Mar 1732/3, including a life right to John's wife, 140 a., being the land John lived on, (3) to son Matthew on 22 Feb 1732/3 110 a. bounded by Coldwater Run, (4) to son William on 22 Feb 1732/3 the 100 a. he was living on, and (5) to son Joseph on 22 Feb 1732/3 the 100 a. he was living on, adjoining his brother James (B36, 1725-1737:383-385).

On 23 Dec 1714 John Farlar, Jr., received a second land grant of 300 a. in Henrico (later Chesterfield) Co. in the Forks of Proctor's Creek (B2, 10:217); this grant was based on a survey dated 3 Mar 1706 (B36, 1706-1709:97). When the sheriff placed the 1736 tax levy on property located on the south side of James River in Henrico Co., John, Jr., and each of his six eldest sons were listed (B1), all except Francis being real estate holders. The two youngest sons Henry and Peter had already moved to Amelia Co. John Jr. paid five levies and taxes on 320 a. in 1736.

In his will dated 6 Apr 1754 and probated that same year in Chesterfield Co., John Farley of Dale Parish gave a life right in his plantation, negroes, and other personal property to his wife Elizabeth (B5, 1:200). His 300-acre plantation [on which he presumably was then living] was devised to his son John and John's wife during their natural lives and then to son Peter. The negroes were divided amongst the children, including Dickboy (after a life right to daughter Mary Womack) and wench Lucy and her increase to son Francis. His son John was appointed executor and the will was witnessed by John Archer, James Clay, and Richard Nunnaly. An inventory of the estate of Elizabeth wife of John Farley was made on 4 May 1761 by Christopher Bass, Henry Walthall, and Henry Winfree (B5).

(B1, B2, B5, B32, B33, B34, B35, B36, D1, D7, D10, D19, D21)

FAMILY 904-905

JOHN FARLEY, SR. (1648) and MARY (1652)

JOHN FARLEY, SR., son of Thomas Farley (1600) and wife Jane Sefton (1604), was b. 1648 at Archers Hope, James City, Va.; d. after 1708 in Chesterfield (then Henrico) Co., Va.; md. MARY, b. abt 1652. Children (Farley)--all probably b. in Henrico Co., Va.:

MARY, b. 1668; md. THOMAS BAUGH.

*JOHN, JR., b. 1670; d. 1754; md. ELIZABETH. (Refer to Family 452-453 for further details.)

SAMUEL, b. 1673.

ELIZABETH, b. abt 1675; md. Dec 1698 in Bristol Parish, Henrico, Va., to DANIEL STEWART (D19).

EDWARD, b. 1678; probably died in infancy.

JAMES, b. 1679.

MATTHEW, b. 1682.
 WILLIAM, b. 1685.
 ARCHER (twin), b. 1688.
 EDWARD (twin), b. 1688.

(Note: names and birth years of children after J. K. Farley, Jr. (D1), who credited names of children as coming "from Randolph W. Farley and not confirmed from other sources." The possibility exists that some of these persons were actually children of John, Jr.)

The following is traditional about John Farley, Sr.: he was born at Archers Hope, Charles City, Va., a son of Thomas Farley and Jane Sefton (D1). He migrated to Surry Co., Va., in 1655 but removed to Charles City Co. between 1655 and 1674 (D20, No. 444058). His plantation on the waters of Blackwater River or Swamp was on the Charles City-Henrico Co. line [presumably in 1749 the Chesterfield-Prince George Co. line]; the larger part of his plantation had been conveyed to his son John, Jr., prior to 1692 and lay in Henrico Co., the 75 a. kept for himself lay on the Charles City Co. side of the line (D1). (Note: the acreage conveyed by John, Sr., to his son John, Jr., is unknown but may have been involved in the 471 a. later granted by Virginia patent to John Jr.) As a planter of Henrico Co. in 1679, he made affidavit that he was then aged 31 years of age. His progeny also later appeared in Cumberland, Prince Edward, Charlotte, and Lunenburg Co. (D1).

John Farley (also Farloe) was recorded in the following entries in Henrico Co. (B35): His wife Mary was cited by the Bristol Parish Court on 25 May 1678 for failure to attend church more than three times the last 12 month (1:71). John was taxed for one tithe in 1679 (1:102). He served as a member of the jury on 12 Jan 1680 (1:162) and 1 Apr 1681 (1:162). He had indentured servants including one John Hatchett, 25 Apr 1685 (5:413). John was called before the Bristol Parish Court in Jan 1692 for not assisting in clearing county roads (2:410). These entries suggest his residence was in Henrico at least after 1678.

A court record dated 17 Apr 1693 verified that John Farley (Sr.) had moved from the lease of John Worsham to the plantation he then lived on (B35, 5:411-413). Mention was made that John had removed personal property from his former home, the "house at Clark Field," to his present house at "Blackwater (Womack's)". On a conveyance dated 2 Dec 1678 John Worsham of Bristol Parish and wife Phebe acknowledged a lease of 100 a. on Appomattox River in Bristol Parish to John Farley, all remainder interests in said land going to the grantor's brother Charles Worsham at the expiration of said lease (B35, Volume 1).

An exchange of lands between John Womack of Henrico Co., with John Farley, Sr., all parties resident of Bristol Parish, is verified in the Henrico Co. records. On 20 Oct 1692 John Womack and wife Mary conveyed to John Farley, Sr., "my plantation I now live on containing about 100 acres in Bristol Parish, Henrico Co., given me by my brother Richard Womack" near Holmes Spring, Peter Ashbrook's land, and Reedy Branch (B35, 5:378). John Womack assigned 20,000 lbs. of merchantable tobacco and casings as assurity to transfer title. This Henrico Co. record further verifies that Womack in exchange was receiving a "plantation of John Farley, Sr., "said land and plantation located at Blackwater in Charles City Co. being about 75 a. as it is now marked out from the land of John Farley, Jr., granted and conveyed by the said John Farley, Sr." This conveyance was witnessed by Thomas Gayton, William Walthall, and Nick Dison.

Since the Charles Co. records from 1665 to 1765 are not existence, the Charles Co. document conveying John Farley, Sr.'s, land to Womack is unattainable; thus, information on the lands Farley was exchanging is based solely on the counterpart conveyance recorded in Henrico Co. Farley's

plantation on Blackwater Swamp [or river] being exchanged was in Charles City Co. until 1703 when that part south of the James River became Prince George Co. (Note: this tract was later sold by John Womack, Sr., on 4 Aug 1714 to John Womack, Jr.). In summary, prior to 1692 John Farley, Sr., resided on the lease lands of Worsham in Henrico (later Chesterfield) Co. while the 75 acres he owned was in Charles City (later Prince George) Co., while son John Jr., was a land owner in Henrico during this time.

In Henrico Co. in 1705 John Farley Sr. paid quitrent Co. on 100 a. while John, Jr., paid quitrent on 551 a. (B35). The 100-acre tract was the tract John, Sr., received in the land exchange; the 551-acre tract may have been in part or solely the part John, Jr., had been conveyed out of his father's original plantation. In a deed of gift dated 29 Oct 1708, John Farley, Sr., of Bristol Parish, Henrico Co., conveyed "my old plantation" (sic the Womack or second plantation) of 100 a. by John Womack to his daughter Mary, wife of Thomas Baugh (B36, 1706-9:151). This tract was presumably within the 272 acres that Thomas Baugh paid taxes on in 1736 (B1).

(B1, B35, B36, D1, D19, D20)

FAMILY 906-907

JOHN ARCHER (1644) and ELIZABETH ROYAL (1648)

JOHN ARCHER was b. abt 1644; d. 1695; an early resident of Chesterfield Co., Va.; md. ELIZABETH ROYAL, b. abt 1648 probably at Conjuror's Neck, Chesterfield, Va., dau. of Joseph Royall (1682) and wife Elizabeth Kennon (1679). Children (Archer)--probably in Chesterfield Co.:

THOMAS, b. abt 1670.

HANNAH, b. abt 1672.

*ELIZABETH, b. abt 1674; md. JOHN FARLEY, JR. (Refer to Family 452-453 for additional information.)

SARAH, b. abt 1676.

(D21)

FAMILY 1808-1809

THOMAS FARLEY (1600) AND JANE SEFTON (1604)

THOMAS FARLEY, son of Roger Farley (1560) and wife Jane Evans (1564), was b. abt 1600 at Worcester, Worcester, Eng. (D19) [also given as Towthorpe, York, Eng. (D1)]; d. probably d. after 1650 at Archers, James City, Va.; md. 1622 to JANE SEFTON, b. abt 1604 and dau. of Earl Sefton. Children (Farley)--all or most b. in at Archer's Hope, James City Co., Va.:

ANN, b. 1623 or 1624; one tradition is that she was born while here parents were crossing the Atlantic; prob. md. (Col.) RICHARD LEE.

ARCHER, b. 1627; prob. md. ELIZABETH READE, who married Thomas Bushrod as her second husband (D1).

BARBARA, b. 1628; reportedly killed by Indians.

GEORGE, b. 1631; d. 1676, a martyr as a captain in Bacon's Rebellion (D1). Concluded by Carper (D19) to be the same George Farley that owned land and resided in Charles City Co. on Blackwater Swamp, and was apt to have been the source of land owned there by John Farley, Sr. [his brother].

PHILLIP, b. 1633.

THOMAS, b. 1636; md. 1666 to BARBARA ROLFE.

VIRGINIA, b. 1637; md. 1665 to HENRY ST. JOHN.

FABYAN, b. 1640; md. 1642 to Bonnie Belle.
 BONNIE BELL, b. 1642.
 JAMES, b. 1643.
 ELIZABETH, b. 1645; probably md. Thomas Bushrod.
 RICHARD, b. 1647.
 *JOHN (SR.) (twin), b. 1648; md. MARY. (Refer to Family 904-905 for further details.)
 WILLIAM (twin), b. 1648.
 THOMPSON, b. 1650.

The names, relationships, dates, and years of birth in this family unit are taken from Farley (D1), as based upon the records of Randolph W. Farley of Nashua, N.H. "Thomas Farley of Worcester [England] came to Virginia in 1623 on [Ship] Ann and was living with his wife and Jane, and his daughter Ann, at Archer's Hope (in James City Co.) in 1623. He was burgess for the plantations between Harrup and Archer's Hope and Martin's Hundred at ehe session of March 1629-30, and for Archer's Hope [in] February 1631-32" (D17, 20:178-179). Thomas received a land patent at Archer's Hope and was a planter and tobacco producer.

The following references to Thomas Farley, his name mostly spelled "Ffarley", are entered in the court records of James City Co. (B37), as abstracted by Carper (D19): Thomas was a witness in a court case in January 1624. Formerly of Worcester in Worcestershire, England, gentleman, Thomas had arrived at the James; he took an oath of supremacy and allegiance in June 1624. Thomas was cited in August 1626 for absenting himself from Sunday church services for three months and was often hunting hogs on James City Island instead. Thomas was ordered in November 1628 to pay Joseph Johnson damages his hogs had caused the latter's corn. Reference was made in November 1628 to Thomas's plantation at Archer's Hope and to his indentured servants, some of whom had been set to the use of Humfrey Ffarley, a younger brother.

(D1, D17, D7, D19)

FAMILY 1814-1815

JOSEPH ROYALL (1682) and ELIZABETH KENNON (1679)

JOSEPH ROYALL, son of Joseph Royall (1646) and wife Mary Eppes (1664), was b. 1682 in Virginia; d. 1748 in Henrico Co.; md. Dec 1698 to ELIZABETH KENNON, b. 1679 at Conjuror's Neck, Chesterfield, Va., dau. of Richard Kennon (1650) and wife Elizabeth Worsham (1656). Children (Royall)--probably b. Conjuror's Neck:

WILLIAM, b. abt 1642.
 JOHN, b. abt 1644.
 MARY, b. abt 1646.
 ELIZABETH, b. abt 1648; md. JOHN ARCHER. (See Family 906-907 for additional information.)
 LITTLEBERRY, b. abt 1650.
 RICHARD, b. abt 1652.

(D21)

FAMILY 3616-3617

ROGER FARLEY (1560) and JANE EVANS (1564)

ROBER FARLEY, son of Reginald Farley (1530) and wife Barbara Hastings (1532), was b. abt. 1560 at Towthorpe, York, Eng.; d. 16 Sep 1622 at

Worcester; md. probably at Worcester to JANE EVANS, b. abt 1564, who had previously md. a Mr. Allen and had a son Robert Allen by him. Children (Farley)--prob. all b. at Worcester:

ROBERT, b. abt 1592.
 WILLIAM, b. abt 1594.
 ELLIOT, b. abt 1596.
 EDWARD, b. abt 1598.
 *THOMAS, b. 1600; md. 1622 to JANE SEFTON. (Refer to Family 1808-1809 for additional information.)
 HUMPHREY, b. abt 1602; d. prior 17 Mar 1655; md. SUSANNA SHIPPEY, whose will was dated 17 Mar 1655 and proved 10 April 1656 in London, Eng. (D19). Children (Farley): Thomas (md. Joyce), Susanna (md. Charles Gregory), Anne (md. Peter Mitchell).
 SUSANNA, b. abt 1604; md. WILLIAM CEYCILL.
 MARGARET, b. abt 1606; md. Mr. BROADHURST.
 KATHERINE, b. abt 1608; md. mr. BARSLEY.
 JANE, b. abt 1610; md. THOMAS ROGERS.

Roger Farley, a gentleman of Worcester, Eng., made his will on 29 Mar 1622; it was probated on 25 Sep 1622 (D17, 20:178; 1912). His dwellings and lands in Worcester and lands at Anbury als Avenbury, Co. Hereford, were devised by will; his son Robert was executor and residuary heir.

(D1, D7, D17, D19)

FAMILY 3628-3629

JOSEPH ROYALL (1646) and MARY EPPES (1664)

JOSEPH ROYALL, son of Joseph Royall (1602) and wife Katharine Banks (1627), was b. 1646 in Henrico Co., Va.; d. 1732 in Henrico Co.; md. 1680 to MARY EPPES. Mary, dau. of Francis Eppes (1627) and wife Elizabeth Littleberry (1623), was b. 1664 in Virginia; d. 1698 in Henrico Co. Children (Royall):

(D21)

FAMILY 3630-3631

RICHARD KENNON (1650) and ELIZABETH WORSHAM (1656)

RICHARD KENNON, son of John Kennon, was b. 1650 probably at Conjuror's Neck, then Henrico, Va.; d. 20 Aug 1696 in Henrico Co.; md. 1674 in Henrico Co., Va., to ELIZABETH WORSHAM. Elizabeth, dau. of William Worsham (1625) and wife Elizabeth Littleberry (1623), was b. 1656 in Virginia; d. after 1705 in Henrico Co., Va. Children (Kennon)--probably all b. Conjuror's Neck:

*ELIZABETH, b. 1679; md. JOSEPH ROYALE. (Refer to Family 1814-1815 for additional details.)
 MARY, b. 29 June 1679; d. 29 June 1727 at Cobbs, Henrico, Va.; md. 29 Dec 1697 in Prince George Co., Va., to JOHN BOLLING.
 MARTHA, b. 1681; md. 22 Dec 1701 in Henrico Co. to ROBERT MUMFORD.
 RICHARD, b. 5 Dec 1684; d. 8 Mar 1688 at Conjuror's Neck.
 WILLIAM, b. 1685; d. 1735 at Bristol, Henrico, Va.; md. ANNE EPPES.
 SARAH, b. 1689; d. 1748; md. FRANCIS EPPES.
 RICHARD, b. 1690; d. 1736 in Charles City Co., Va.; md. 1719 to AGNES BOLLING.

JUDITH, b. 1692; d. 14 Oct 1759 in Albemarle Parish, Sussex, Va.; md.
June 1711 in Henrico Co. to THOMAS ELDRIDGE.

(D21)

FAMILY 7232-7233

REGINALD FARLEY (1530) and BARBARA HASTINS (1532)

REGINALD FARLEY was b abt 1530 probably at Towthorpe, York, Eng.; md.
BARBARA HASTINGS, b. abt 1532. Children (Farley)--all probably b. at
Towthorpe, York, Eng.:

THOMAS, b. abt 1558.

*ROGER, b. abt 1560; d. 1622 at Worcester; md. JANE EVANS. (Refer to
Family 3616-3617 for further information.)

HUMPHREY, b. abt 1562.

GEORGE, b. abt 1564.

MICHAEL, b. abt 1568; md. MARY ELIZABETH BAKER.

FABYAN, b. 1570; md. JANE HUNGERFORD.

ALICE, b. abt 1572; md. Mr. KENT.

(D1, D7, D17, D19)

FAMILY 7256-7257

JOSEPH ROYALL (1602) and KATHARINE BANKS (1627)

JOSEPH ROYALL, son of Joseph Royall (1550) and wife Angeline (1550), was
b. 1602 in England; d. abt 1658 in Henrico Co., Va.: md. abt 1645 in Henrico
Co. to KATHARINE BANKS. Katharine, dau. of Christopher Banks, was b. 1627
probably in Northamptonshire, Eng.; d. 1 Dec 1686 in Henrico Co., Va.; bur.
Presque Isle, Henrico, Va. Children probably by Katharine (Royall)--b. Va.:

*JOSEPH, b. 1646 in Henrico Co.; d. 1732 in Henrico Co.; md. MARY EPPES.
(Refer to Family 3628-3629 for additional information.)

Daughter, b. 1648.

Daughter, b. 1650.

SARAH, b. 1652; md. JOHN WILKINSON.

LITTLEBERRY, b. 1656; md. MARY EPPES.

Joseph reportedly had other spouses and children by them.

(D21)

FAMILY 7258-7259

FRANCIS EPPES (1627) and ELIZABETH LITTLEBERRY (1623)

FRANCIS EPPES, son of Francis Eppes (1597) and wife Mary
(1601), was b. 19 Nov 1627 probably in England; d. 2 Dec 1678 in Henrico Co.,
Va.; md. ELIZABETH LITTLEBERRY, b. 1623 probably in England and d. 23 Sep 1678
at Bermuda Hundred, Henrico, Va. (Note: Elizabeth Littleberry md. (1)
William Worsham and (2) Francis Eppes. Children (Eppes)--all b. Bermuda
Hundred:

WILLIAM, b. 1661; d. 16 Nov 1710 in Prince George Co., Va.; md.
ELIZABETH.

*MARY, b. 1664; d. 1698 in Henrico Co.; md. (1) JOSEPH ROYALL; md. (2) abt 1681 to JOHN HARDIMAN. (Refer to Family 3628-3629 for additional information.)
 LITTLEBERRY, b. abt 1665; d. 1743 in Charles City Co., Va.; md. Miss LLEWELLEN.
 ANNA, b. abt 1666.

(D21)

FAMILY 7262-7263

WILLIAM WORSHAM (1625) and ELIZABETH LITTLEBERRY (1623)

WILLIAM WORSHAM was b. 1625 probably in England; d. 1660 or 1661 probably in Henrico (now Chesterfield) Co., Va.; bur. Chesterfield Co., Va.; md. in Charles City Co., Va., to ELIZABETH LITTLEBERRY, b. 1623 probably in England, d. 23 Sep 1676 at Bermuda Hundred, Henrico, Va.. (Note: Elizabeth Littleberry md. (1) William Worsham and (2) Francis Eppes.) Children (Worsham)--all b. in Henrico Co. or adjoining counties:

WILLIAM, b. 1647; d. prior 1678 in Henrico Co.
 JOHN, b. abt 1650; d. 1 Oct 1729 at Bermuda Hundred; md. PHEBE.
 *ELIZABETH, b. 1656; d. after 1705 in Henrico Co.; md. RICHARD KENNON.
 (Refer to Family 3630-3631 for additional information.)
 MARY, b. 1658; d. 20 June 1737 at Bermuda Hundred; md. 1 Apr 1680 in Henrico Co. to RICHARD LIGGON; md. 29 Dec 1697 to JOHN BOLLING.
 CHARLES, b. 1660; d. 1719 in Bermuda Hundred; md. MARY BEVILLE.
 JOHN, b. 1662; d. 9 June 1729 in Henrico Co.

(D21)

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

A. Census Records.

None

B. Land, Probate, Tax, and Court Records.

- B1. Henrico Co., Va., Sheriff's Record Book.
- B2. Virginia Land Grants and Patents.
- B3. Chesterfield Co., Va., Court Orders.
- B4. Chesterfield Co., Va., Deeds.
- B5. Chesterfield Co., Va., Wills and Inventories.
- B6. Pittsylvania Co., Va., Deeds.
- B7. Virginia Court of Appeals, October Term, 1794; James Burnside, Appellant Vs. Andrew Reid, Samuel Culbertson, and Thomas Walker, Appellees; and Andrew Reid Vs. James Burnside.
- B8. Montgomery Co., Va., Surveys.
- B9. Bedford Co., Va., Deeds.
- B10. Montgomery Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B11. Montgomery Co., Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B12. Montgomery Co., Va., Land Grants.
- B13. Giles Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B14. Giles Co., Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B15. Montgomery Co., Va., Deeds.
- B16. Montgomery Co., Va., Wills.
- B17. Giles Co., Va., Deeds.
- B18. White Co., Ill., Court Records.
- B19. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Surveys.

- B20. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Entry Book.
- B21. Monroe Co., W. Va., Surveys.
- B22. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Land Grants.
- B23. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B24. Monroe Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B25. Monroe Co., W. Va., Order Books.
- B26. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Court Records.
- B27. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B28. Monroe Co., W. Va., Court Records/Orders.
- B30. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B31. Henry Co., Ind., Wills.
- B32. Powhatan Co., Va., Wills.
- B33. Halifax Co., Va., Wills.
- B34. Amelia Co., Va., Wills.
- B35. Henrico Co., Va., Records.
- B36. Henrico Co., Va., Deeds.
- B37. James City Co., Va., Court Records.

C. Vital, Church, and Cemetery Records.

- C1. Composite Lists of Marriage Bonds, Parental Permits, and Minister Returns, Monroe Co., W. Va. (1799-1850); by Aubrey O. Smith (comp.); 1962; Beckley, W. Va.

D. Compiled and Miscellaneous Records.

- D1. Twelve Generations of Farleys; by Jesse Kelso Farley, Jr.; 1943; Press of Albin O. Horn Co., Chicago, Ill.; 171 & 87 p.
- D2. Smith-Riffe Collection of New River Genealogy and Local History; by Aubrey O. Smith (Comp.) and Winton A. Riffe (Co.-comp.), and John F. Vallentine (Ed.); Microfilmed on 17 rolls at Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D3. Documentary History of Dunmore's War, 1774; by Reuben Gold Thwaites and Louise Phelps Kellogg; 1905; Wisc. Hist. Soc., Madison, Wisc.
- D4. The History of Summers County, West Virginia, 1984; by Summers Co. Hist. Soc.; 1984; Hinton, W. Va.
- D5. Historical Sketch of Bedford Co., Va., 1753-1907; 1907; J. P. Bell & Co., Lynchburg, Va.
- D6. Revolutionary War Pension Applications, National Archives, Washington, D. C.
- D7. Family Group Records Archives, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D8. DAR Patriot Index; by Natl. Soc. Daughters of the Amer. Rev.; 1990 (Centennial Ed.); Washington, D. C.
- D9. History of Summers County from the Earliest Settlement to the Present Time; by James H. Miller; 1908; Hinton, W. Va.
- D10. Virginia Calendar of Papers.
- D11. Chronicles of Border Warfare; by Alexander S. Withers; 1895 (Repub.); Robert Clarke Co., Cincinnati, Ohio.
- D12. Battle of Point Pleasant, A Battle of the Revolution; by Lidia Simpson Poffenbarger; 1909; State Gazette Publ., Point Pleasant, W. Va.
- D13. Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States, 1790: Records of State Enumerations, 1782-1785, Virginia; 1908; U.S. Govt. Printing Office, Washington, D.C.
- D14. A New River Heritage, 4 vols.; by William Sanders; 1991-1994; McClain Printing Co., Parsons, W. Va.; 320 p., 400 p., 332 p., 429 p.
- D15. The History of Summers County, West Virginia, 1984; by Summers Co. Hist. Soc.; 1984; Hinton, W. Va.

- D16. Memoirs: My Life Among Pioneer West Virginians; by Walter J. Pack; 1955; Unpublished mss.
- D17. Virginia Magazine of History & Biography (periodical).
- D18. Virginia Genealogist (periodical).
- D19. The Farleys; a research report compiled by O. H. Carper, Richmond, Va., for Aubrey O. Smith, Beckley, W. Va., July 8, 1944 (mss. included in D2).
- D20. DAR Membership Applications; Natl. Soc. DAR, Washington, D.C.
- D21. Ancestral File, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.

LIVELY-MADDY ANCESTRAL LINE

FAMILY 114-115

COTTRELL LIVELY (1763) and SARAH MADDY (1773)

COTTRELL LIVELY, grandson of Mark Lively (1690) and wife Mary (1694), was b. 16 May 1763 in Albemarle Co., Va.; d. 3 Dec 1838 in Monroe Co., W. Va.; bur. Lively Cem., near Orchard, Monroe Co.; md. 24 Oct 1790 in Greenbrier (now Monroe) Co., W. Va., to SARAH (SALLY) MADDY. Sarah, dau. of James Maddy (1740) and wife Ann Morris (1740), was b. 16 Oct 1773 probably in Rockingham Co., Va.; d. 12 Sep 1839 in Monroe Co.; bur. Lively Cem. Children (Lively)-- b. near Orchard on the headwaters of Brush Creek and Blue Lick Run of Hans Creek:

*JANE, b. 10 Sep 1791; d. 26 or 28 June 1863 in Monroe Co.; md. 2 July 1811 in Monroe Co. to LOAMMI PACK. (Refer to Family 57-58 for additional information.)

JOSEPH, b. 1 May 1793; d. 13 Jan 1862 in Monroe Co.; bur. in "the home cemetery on the hill north of the house," possibly the Thrasher Lively Cem. near Lindside, Monroe, W. Va.; md. 12 Aug 1812 in Monroe Co. to MARY (POLLY) PACK. Mary, dau. of Samuel Pack (1755) and wife Mary Farley (1757), was b. 23 Aug 1788 on New River, Summers, W. Va.; d. 4 Jan 1871 in Monroe Co.; maybe bur. in the Thrasher-Lively Cem. Children (Lively)--b. near Lindside: Elizabeth (md. Charles Lawrence), Malinda (md. George Thompson), Loammi (md. (1) Matilda Jones, (2) Sena Dimmitt), Emily (md. Isaac Ellison), Rebecca (md. James Addison Skaggs), Rufus (md. Malinda Williams), Elias (md. (1) Letha Ann Fleshman, (2) Mandana S. Canteberry), Levi (md. Adaline E. Stodghill), and Christopher (md. Matilda Margaret Thrasher).

Joseph and Mary lived on Hans Creek in Monroe Co. In 1845 Joseph owned six tracts of land on Hans Creek totaling 766 a. (B15). When recorded in the 1850 census, he was recorded as a farmer residing in Monroe Co. owning land valued at \$5,000 (A4). He also owned large tracts of land in Raleigh and Fayette Co., W. Va., as well as two slaves named June and Cate (man and wife). During his lifetime, Joseph also held land on Peters Mountain where he ran cattle and had a large deer park where 40 to 60 deer were kept (D26).

WILLIAM, b. 19 Mar 1795; d. May 1851 in Vinton Co., Ohio; md. (1) 27 Dec 1819 in Monroe Co. to ELIZABETH McDANIEL, b. 1800-4 and d. after 1845. Children (Lively)--older children b. in Monroe Co. and remainder in Vinton Co.: Matilda (md. George Morrison, (2) Edward Salts, Jr., and (3) William Landman), John Cottrell (md. (1) Betsy, (2) Mary Florence Lively, (3) Annie R. Hunsicker, and (4) Rebecca Davis), Sarah (prob. md. Benjamin Morrison), Clarinda (md. John Goodrich), Wilson (md. Louisa A. Hitt), Rebecca Jane (md. Harrison Shiflet), David, Narcissus, and William M. and probably Mary, Elizabeth, and Neoma. William md. (2) between 1845 and 1850 to MARY, b. 1805 in Va., by whom he apparently had no issue.

William's family was put together with considerable difficulty. Clarinda and Sarah have been placed in this family on the basis of sex and age categories of William's household in the 1830 and 1840 censuses (A3, A9), on their being born in Va. (W. Va.), and their proximity to William when recorded in the 1850 census (A10). William is reported to have had 13 children, but only twelve proven and probable children can be named. While yet living in Monroe Co., William received from his parents 132 a. on Hans Creek

on 16 Jan 1826 (B13, J:477). As assignee of C. Lively, William paid taxes on this tract adjoining land of his brother Joseph Lively in 1830 (B15), but later in 1830 William and wife Elizabeth sold this tract to Joseph Lively (B13, J:562).

When William moved his family to Ohio in the 1830's, he settled in what was then Jackson Co. but later Vinton Co. As a resident of Vinton Co., he made his will on 28 Apr 1851 (B28, 1:336). Mentioned in his will was his wife Mary, his four youngest children (not named), and his stepson William, apparently William Allen, age 8, living in his household in 1850 (A6). At the time of his death William owned W1/2NE1/4, Sec. 12 (T10 R18), from which Mary received 30 a. as the widow's dower when the estate was settled on 5 Dec 1853 (B29, 1:59, 69).

JUDITH (JUDY), b. 16 Mar 1797; d. Dec 1874; bur. Broyles Cem., Mud Run, Monroe, W. Va.; md. 14 Jan 1823 in Monroe Co. to PETER MCGHEE. Peter, son of John McGhee and wife Sarah Harvey, was b. 26 Nov 1807 prob. in Monroe Co. Children (McGhee)--b. Monroe Co.: Catharine (md. Henry Thompson), Mary J. (Polly) (md. Andrew J. Broyles), Elizabeth (md. John C. Ballard), John M. (md. Mary Elizabeth Foster), Joel S., James Alexander (md. Sudy Dillion), Sarah, and Lady Margaret (md. Julius Ballard).

Peter McGhee owned 212 a. on Hans Creek in 1837 (B15); in 1845 he paid taxes on this tract plus an additional 100 a. on Blue Lick Run. In 1850 and 1853 he owned 10 a. on Hans Creek and 100 acres on Blue Lick. On 10 Dec 1855 Peter McGhee conveyed his rights in 100 a. on Blue Lick Run adjoining Anderson Smith to Wilson Lively (his brother-in-law) (B13, S:298). Peter apparently died soon afterwards; in 1870 Judy was residing in the home of her daughter Elizabeth, Mrs. John C. Ballard (A11).

COTTRELL, JR., b. 25 Feb 1799; d. between 1836 and 1847, probably in Monroe Co.

JOHN HUTCHINSON, b. 28 Dec 1800; d. 6 Oct 1865 in Jackson Co., Ohio; bur. Lively-Sullivan Cem., near Jackson, Jackson, Ohio; md. 18 Feb 1826 in Monroe Co. to MARY ELIZABETH (POLLY) PARKER. Polly, dau. of Joseph Parker and wife Jane Rector, was b. 21 May 1807 in Monroe Co.; d. 10 Aug 1888 in Jackson Co., Ohio; bur. Lively-Sullivan Cem. Children (Lively)--first child born in Monroe Co., remainder in Jackson Co.: Lorenzo Dow (md. Eleanor Russell), Sarah Jane (md. Milton Sullivan), Lydia (md. Allan McGhee), Elizabeth, Jesse (md. Margaret Aleshire), Joseph Parker (md. Margaret Rambo), Martha, and Mary Florence (md. John Cottrell Lively).

John H. moved with his family from W. Va. in the spring of 1828 and settled in Lick Twp., Jackson, Ohio; he was a farmer and doctor (D16). In his will dated 22 Sep 1865 and probated 13 Nov 1865 in Jackson Co., Ohio (B30, A:412), John H. gave a life right in lieu of dower to the 80-acre farm where he resided with remainder rights to daughter Sarah Jane and Mary. He directed that a house and lot located in Hamden, Vinton Co., was to be sold to pay debts. In her will probated in 1888, his widow Mary Lively noted she had three sons and one daughter then living and specified she was to be buried in the family burying ground on the old homestead (B30, C:199).

JAMES, b. 20 Dec 1802; d. 1832-3 in Monroe Co.; probably never married. Between 1830 and 1833 James owned 168 a. of land on Blue Lick of Hans Creek and two additional tracts of 100 and 180 a. on Hans Creek (B15).

THOMAS, b. 20 Jan 1805; d. 1841-1850, probably after 1847, in Monroe Co.; md. 29 Sep 1828 in Monroe Co. to MARY (POLLY) RINER, b. 1800, a sister of Simeon Riner. No record of issue.

Thomas Lively lived on Hans Creek, owning two tracts totaling 380 a. in 1834 (B15). A tract of 200 a. on Hans Creek had been purchased from Joseph and Polly Lively on 20 Apr 1829; the 180-acre tract had been purchased from James Lively in 1830 (B13, J:417, J:294). On 7 Dec 1841 Thomas sold to Anderson Smith 212 a. on Hans Creek excluding the 1/3 life right of his wife Polly (B13, N:302). Mary Lively paid taxes on her life right in 66 2/3 a. on Hans Creek in 1845 (B15), suggesting that Thomas was already dead. However, he was listed in 1847 as a living heir of Sarah Lively [his mother] by her executor, Wilson Lively (D7, #R6389). When recorded in the 1850 and 1860 censuses (A4, A8), Mary was listed living alone.

HEMPHILL, b. 21 Jan 1807; died young, probably prior to 1810.

MADISON, b. 5 Jan 1809; d. 1809-1810.

MARY (POLLY), b. 13 Jan 1811; d. 1840-1847; md. 20 Aug 1840 in Monroe Co. to JOHN SMITH, son of William Smith and wife Elizabeth Miller. She died prior to 1847 and possibly within a short time after her marriage. Issue, if any, are unknown.

SARAH, b. 16 Apr 1813; d. after 1880 probably in Nodaway Co., Mo.; md. 7 Mar 1833 in Monroe Co. to ANDERSON SMITH, b. 1813 probably in Monroe Co., son of William Smith and Elizabeth Miller. Children (Smith)--all except last child b. in Monroe Co.: Daughter, Mary, Lewis J., Sarah Jane (md. (1) John Broyles, (2) Mr. Duncan), Lorenzo (md. Mary L.), Caleb P. (md. Laurette M. Davis), William P. (md. Cordelia), Elizabeth Ann (md. John Lemuel Rhoades), Leroy Chester, Andrew Jackson (md. Sarah E. Murphy), and George A.

Anderson and his family lived on Hans Creek in Monroe Co. Here he owned two tracts of 180 a. and 2/3 interest in 212 a. in 1845 (B15), the first tract having been conveyed to him by Cottrell Lively on 2 Apr 1836 and the second tract by Thomas Lively on 7 Dec 1841 (B13, L:155, N:302). These lands were sold on 23 Feb 1857 by Anderson Smith and wife Sarah to John Coulter (B13, T:137). This Anderson family moved to Andrew Co., Mo., in 1857 and to Nodaway Co., Mo., in 1858, settling in Jefferson Twp. (D30).

WILSON, b. 12 Apr 1815; d. 4 Apr 1865; d. 4 Apr 1865 (also given as 7 Apr 1865) at Farmville, Prince Edward, Va.; bur. Lively Cem., near Orchard; md. (1) 7 Mar 1836 in Monroe Co. to REBECCA SWEENEY, b. abt 1815, dau. of Archibald Sweeney. Most family sources report no children were born to this union, but one source (D26) indicates a son Andrew. Wilson md. (2) 8 July 1839 in Monroe Co. to JANE R. COALTER, b. abt 1817 and d. abt 1843. Children (Lively)--b. Brush Creek, Monroe Co.: Mary Ann (md. William M. Lively) and Robert.

Wilson md. (3) 14 Nov 1844 in Monroe Co. to ELIZABETH GWINN. Elizabeth, dau. of Andrew Gwinn and wife Mary Newsome, was b. 22 Oct 1823 in Monroe Co.; d. 27 Jan 1894 at Lowell, Summers, W. Va.; md. (1) Wilson Lively; md. (2) 16 Aug 1868 to James W. Maddy. Children (Lively)--b. Brush Creek: William Scott (Willie), John Randolph (md. Alice Coiner), Emily C. (md. William Kincaid), Charles Wesley, Ella Margaret (md. Henry Fletcher Kesler), Gwinn, Jennie Pack (md. Bunyan Lee Kessler), Bethi Mandana Blanche (Betty) (md. James French Holroyd), Wilbur Jenkins or Bertram Jenkins (md. Miss Heater), and Frank Wilson (md. Anna E. Prince).

Wilson Lively inherited through his father's will (B18, 3:398) the home place of 400 a. at the head of Brush Creek and a 50-acre tract on Elk and Blue Lick Run. That same year Wilson paid the taxes on these two tracts. (B15). His real estate was valued at \$33,000 in 1850 (A4). In addition to being an extensive landowner and farmer, Wilson was sheriff of Monroe Co. for 16 years, a captain of Virginia Militia (Confederate) during the Civil War, and a member of the state legislature for two years (D26). Wilson reportedly died of a heart attack on hearing of the imminent surrender of General Lee as he was traveling to Richmond, Va. (Note: Lee formally surrendered to Union forces on 9 Apr 1865.)

Following Wilson's death and during the dark days of the Reconstruction Period, his widow left the old home place and moved to a farm on Greenbrier River to be near her brothers. The Cottrell Lively home place then passed into the hands of strangers and later burned. The home place, however, was later purchased by Lon M. Lively, a grandson of Wilson Lively, who built a new house on the property (D31). Following Lon's death, the old home place was sold to Pearl Huddleston, who owned the property in 1968.

LORENZO, b. 11 Apr 1818; died young.

It is concluded that Cottrell Lively--his name variously recorded also as Godrell, Cothel, Cateral, and even Goodwill--was a grandson of Mark Lively (1690), whose will was probated in Albemarle Co. on 11 June 1752 (B5, 1:32). Although the names of his parents still remain unproven, his father was apparently either Benjamin (1737) or William (1731). Cottrell was definitely not an orphan of unknown or uncertain parentage because in his Revolutionary War pension application dated 11 Oct 1825, he stated: "I have no register of my age but have information recorded from my parents. I shall be either 72 or 73 years old on the 16th May next. Am a native of Albemarle Co., and lived in that county during the War of the Revolution" (D7, File #R6389). Thus, Cottrell made it clear he knew who his parents were, that he had definite information as to when he was born, that he was born in Albemarle Co., Va., and that he had residence in Albemarle Co. during the Revolutionary War.

On the 1799 taxlist of Monroe Co., W. Va., the following notation was made: "Cottrell and Joseph Lively, both of Monroe Co., brothers" (B24). This is in agreement with the claims of some descendants of both men as well as with the close association between the two in the early days of Monroe Co., suggesting the two were brothers. Joseph, who lived on Stony Creek in Monroe Co., is proven to be a son of Benjamin (1737) of Albemarle Co., Va., and grandson of Mark (1690). Rudiman Green Lively, the youngest son of Joseph, reported during his lifetime that Cottrell was his uncle (D9). This has led to the tentative conclusion expressed in Livelys of America (D1, p. 433-434) that Cottrell was also a son of old Benjamin (1737).

Yet, Cottrell was not mentioned in the will of Mark Lively's son Benjamin (B5, 4:245). Had Cottrell been a son of Benjamin and previously received his inheritance, a token bequest to prevent any future claim on the estate would have been customary. Also, Benjamin in his will made bequeaths to the children of Joseph but not to those of Cottrell. Furthermore, no evidence of property transfer or other close association has been found between Cottrell and Benjamin (1737). This brings up the question as to whether the tax assessor in 1797, and possibly Rudiman Green Lively in later years, had sure knowledge of Cottrell and Joseph being brothers or merely assumed this connection because of their close association. There is also the opposing family tradition that Cottrell and Joseph were first cousins rather than brothers (D10). If not Benjamin, then which of the other sons of Mark would be likely candidates? Sons Bethel, Joseph, and John have mostly been ruled out based on not finding Cottrell on the lists of their respective children.

Although somewhat by default, William (1731) son of Mark must be considered a strong candidate as father of Cottrell. It may be significant that Cottrell named no son Benjamin but did name his eldest two sons Joseph and William! A later son of Cottrell was named John Hutchinson Lively but undoubtedly named after John Hutchinson, a prominent resident of early-day Monroe Co., W. Va., rather than after John of Mark. It seems probable that Cottrell's son Joseph was named after Joseph Lively, Cottrell's associate and neighbor in Monroe Co. Cottrell's son William had presumably been named after William of Mark or after Cottrell's brother-in-law, William Maddy.

Little is known about William Lively of Mark excepting that he received one shilling under the 1750 will of his father and was recorded in Albemarle Co. in 1759 and 1762 (refer to Family 456-457). This places William of Mark in a time and place to make him a potential father of Cottrell. No proof has been found whether or not William of Mark ever married and had a family. The hypothesis that Cottrell's given name might have resulted from his mother being a Cottrell, a family surname in Albemarle Co., has been noted but not demonstrated. Finding proof that Cottrell's father was indeed William and that his mother was a Cottrell would clear up a long-standing mystery in the Lively family! It may be that Cottrell's parents had died when he was only a boy, and that he had been raised in the households of either Benjamin (1737) or John (1733).

Although otherwise not found in the records of Albemarle and adjoining counties, Cottrell has been found recorded in an Albemarle Co. road order as follows (B25, 1783-85:398):

"Ordered that the road which at present Lawrence Long is surveyor of be lengthened [sic extended westward] from Colle to Moore's Creek [at the southeast edge of Charlottesville] and that the same be opened and cleared agreeable to the view of Nicholas Lewis, gent., and that he have in addition to his former road gang, Anthony Mullins, Jitaney Pratto, John Bent, Robert Burress, Samuel Young, Cottrell Lively, Joseph Tindell, Vincent Sprouse, David Sprouse, Thomas Jefferson, esq., on the south side of the River and de Rieux with their male labouring titheables." Court held 15 Apr 1785.

This record proves that Cottrell had returned to Albemarle Co. following the Revolutionary War and had resided there for a time before removing to Monroe Co., W. Va. This road work order is important in placing the residence of Cottrell Lively in 1785 somewhere southeast of Charlottesville, Colle being located about six miles north of the Mark Lively farm on which Joseph Lively (1773), later of Monroe Co., W. Va., was raised. The three-mile road segment extended westward from Colle and passed along the south side of Monticello, the family estate of the Jefferson family from which Thomas Jefferson stemmed, thereby providing direct access for the people residing at Monticello into Charlottesville.

Moore's Creek is a relatively short, east-flowing creek that passes by the south side of Charlottesville before turning northward and emptying into Rivanna River. Colle was a historical family residence located four to five miles southeast of Charlottesville in the early days; it was originally the family estate of Philip Mazzei, an ardent supporter of the Revolution. During that war it was inhabited by the Comte de Rieux, who had married a daughter of Mazzei (D27, D28). The obvious objective of this new three-mile road segment, which followed present-day Road 53, was to connect up Charlottesville with the headwaters and northern branches of Buck Island Creek and intersect the road running from Milton on Rivanna River southeastward to Carters Bridge along segments of present-day Roads 732, 795, and 627.

The pension application papers of Cottrell Lively (sometimes given therein erroneously as "Goodwill" Lively) (D7, R6389) provide many details

about his Revolutionary War service. He was drafted in Albemarle Co. for two short tours in the Virginia Militia. The first tour began in Sep or Oct 1780, lasted for about 4 weeks, and included a march under Capt. Mast Leek to Cabin Point, Va., and discharge at Petersburg. The second tour began in May or June 1781, lasted about six weeks and included a march through southern Virginia and around Richmond. In Jan or Feb 1782 Cottrell enlisted for a period of three years; on this hitch he served for a period of 22 months as a private dragoon in Col. Armand's Regt. of Cavalry in Virginia and Pennsylvania. Based on this service in the Continental Line, Cottrell was granted a pension by the Federal Government on 4 Mar 1834 retroactive back to 4 Mar 1831 at the rate of \$98.32 per annum.

Cottrell was also issued a bounty land warrant (No. 4973) for 200 a. for his service as a private in the Continental line (D7). In June 1847 Wilson Lively, a son of Cottrell and as executor of the estate of his deceased mother Sarah, attempted to obtain additional funds from the Federal government he believed due her estate. Although the Pension Bureau rejected this appeal, Wilson provided a valuable service to descendants of his parents when he provided a copy of the family Bible and a sworn statement relative to an official examination of inscriptions on the tombstones of his parents.

It is from the above family Bible record that the names and dates for the children of Cottrell and Sarah have been taken with one exception. For some unknown reason their son John Hutchison Lively was not included. Documents in the pension file record the surviving children of Cottrell and Sarah in June 1847 being Jane Pack, Joseph Lively, William Lively, Judith McGhee, John Lively, Thomas Lively, Sally Smith, and Wilson Lively. Their son John H. was still very much alive and did not die until 1865, suggesting that Wilson Lively had either failed to copy down data for him or it had inadvertently been omitted in the original Bible record. However, the fact of John being a son is verified in the wills of both Cottrell and his wife; and his vital dates were preserved in other family records (D16).

Cottrell Lively had arrived in Monroe (then Greenbrier) Co., W. Va., by 1787 when he was first recorded in the personal property taxlists (B17). His marriage to Sarah Maddy was performed on 24 Oct 1790 by the Rev. John Alderson (C4). Cottrell's home place in Monroe Co.--said county taken from Greenbrier Co. in 1799--was a 400-acre tract of land located about one mile southeast of the present-day hamlet of Orchard on the headwaters of Brush Creek and Hans Creek. As of 1968 the homesite as well as the Cottrell Lively family cemetery was located on land owned by Pearl Huddleston. The home on the property in 1968 was built by Leonidas M. (Lon) Lively, a descendant of Cottrell, in the early 1900's. Cottrell's old house had been located 200 to 300 yards behind the 1968 home (D19).

During his lifetime Cottrell became an extensive land holder in Monroe Co.; he was first taxed for land there beginning in 1790 (B14). He received a grant of 292 acres on Butcher's Run of Brush Creek on 4 Aug 1794, this based on a Virginia treasury warrant issued 13 Sep 1792 (B27, 3:61). However, this tract was sold by Cottrell and wife Sarah to Reuben Dunn on 20 Aug 1797 (B13, A:14). On 18 June 1799 Cottrell purchased from Alexander Hutchinson and wife a 400-acre tract on Elk Lick of Hans Creek (B13, A:7). Cottrell's land on the headwaters of both Rich Creek and Brush Creek became his home place; it adjoined Samuel Pack on the southwest.

Other tracts in the vicinity were added to Cottrell's holdings as follows: (1) 200 a. on Hans Creek from Samuel Hutchinson and wife Miriam in 1805 (B13, B:55); 150 a. from Lively McGhee and wife Wineford of Jackson Co., Ohio, in 1819 (B13, G:55); 190 a. on Hans Creek from Archibald Hutchinson in 1808 (B13, G:85); 100 a. from Christian Peters and wife in 1821 (B13, G:342); 238 a. from Matthew Creed in 1822 (B13, G:598); 50 a. from Gideon Crawford's administrators in 1832 (B13, K:75); 180 a. on Hans Creek from Thomas Lively

[his son] and wife Mary in 1834 (B13, K:496); 10 a. from Aaron Broyles and wife Lydia in 1834 (B13, K:559); and 100 a. on Rich and Brush Creek from Jeremiah Tracy and wife in 1835 (B13, L:223). At the peak of his land holdings in 1835 he was taxed on seven tracts for a total of 898 a. plus an additional 180 a. as assignee of Thomas Lively (B24).

During his lifetime Cottrell and Sarah provided a farm or farms to each or most of their surviving children. In his will dated 15 Nov 1838 and probated 17 Dec 1838 in Monroe Co. (B18, 3:395), Cottrell bequeathed 450 a. (including the 400-acre home place to his son Wilson, 100 acres to his daughter Judy McGhee, 230 acres on Indian Creek to his dau. Polly Lively, the Dunn place of 338 a. to Loammi and Jane Pack, and 180 acres to his dau. Sally Smith. Cottrell further directed that his son Wilson was to care for his mother; he specified that he had previously given land and property to his sons Joseph, Thomas, William, and John. In her will dated 18 Aug 1839 and proved 16 Sep 1839 in Monroe Co. (B18, 3:414), Sarah Lively named her surviving children: sons William, Joseph, Wilson, Thomas, and John and daughters Jane Pack, Sally Smith, Judith McGhee, and Polly Lively.

(Note: the myth of Cottrell's wife Sarah nee Maddy being the niece of Robert Morris (Jr.) of Philadelphia--which refuses to die even after being thoroughly disproved--will be treated under Family 230-231.)

Will of Cottrell Lively

"I Cotrell Lively of the County of Monroe and State of Virginia, calling to mind the certainty of death and the uncertainty of life and being desirous to dispose of my real and personal property with which God has blessed me, do hereby make this my last will and testament in manner following:

Item 1st. I give and bequeath to my son Wilson the lands on which I live containing 450 acres in two tracts on condition that he will support his mother in a decent and comfortable manner during her natural life and on condition that he will pay the sum of thirty dollars as herein after directed provided the title of the fifty acres which I purchased of the administrators of Gideon Crawford proves good; if the title to the fifty acres should not be good, he is not to pay the thirty dollars but render the support to his mother; and if he has the \$30 to pay he is not to be bound to pay it until twelve months after my death.

Item 2d. I give and bequeath to my daughter Judah McGee one hundred acres of land which my son James purchased of the administrators of Gideon Crawford and ten acres which I purchased of Aaron Broyles on Blue Lick Run to hold the same during her natural life and at her death to be sold by my executors and the money equally divided amongst her children. I also give and bequeath to my said daughter Judah the sum of [one] hundred and fifty dollars to her and her children the said sum be deposited in the hands of my son Joseph Lively to be appropriated at his discretion to her and their benefit.

Item 3d. I give and bequeath to my daughter Polly Lively two hundred and thirty eight acres of land on the waters of Indian Creek which was deeded to me by Matthew Creed to her and her heirs forever upon condition that she shall pay to my estate one hundred dollars provided the title to the land proves good; if the title to the land be not good, she is not to pay the \$100.

Item 4th. I desire that my son Wilson and daughter Polly shall each of them have as much property as my other children got when they left me deducting what they may have received.

Item 5th. I give to my wife as much of my household and kitchen furniture, farming utensils, and stock as she may think necessary for her own use and the use of the plantation, to be divided amongst the children as she may direct at her death except the bureau which I desire should [be given] to my daughter Polly, at the death of her mother; and it is my desire that my daughter Polly shall make her residence with her mother during her pleasure and not to be charged by my son Wilson for board.

Item 6. I give and bequeath to Loami and Jane Pack the Dunn place containing 338 acres more or less to them and their heirs forever on condition that they pay to my estate one hundred and fifty dollars.

Item 7th. I desire that the \$30 which my son Wilson is to pay provided the title to 50 acres of land proves good be equally divided between my four daughters Jane Pack, Judah McGee, Sally Smith, and Polly Lively.

Item 8th. I give to my grandson Cottrall Lively son of William Lively twenty dollars, and it is to be understood that his father is not to be bound to pay him the twenty dollars which he has received for him and for which he has given a receipt but that the receipt is to be given up and William to keep the money.

Item 9th. I desire that my wife shall divide the balance of my personal property amongst my children as she may think right after taking what she shall need herself unless it be necessary to sell some portion for the payment of funeral expenses or debts; in that case as much to be sold as necessary and I desire that she shall keep as her own all the money she now has and claims as her own.

Item 10th. I give and bequeath to my daughter Sally Smith one hundred and eighty acres of land joining the lands of Aaron Broyles and being the same land which my son James owned and was deeded by myself to him; but if the title of any part of said land should not prove good I do not wish my son Joseph to be bonded for the title as Charles Dare once deeded the land to him; and I also give to my daughter Sally fifty dollars to be paid out of my estate.

Item 11th. As I have heretofore given land and other property to my sons Joseph, Thomas, William, and John, I have not given them any thing by this will except an equal division of the surplus as herein after specified.

Item 12. I desire that the one hundred acres of land which I purchased from Christian Peters be sold by my executor, equally divided amongst all my children.

Item 13. I desire that all the balance of my estate in whatever it may consist and not disposed of before shall be equally divided amongst all my children.

Lastly, I do hereby appoint my friend John Kearns executor of this my last will and testament, hereby revoking all former will by me made or published. In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 15th day of November 1838.

Signed, sealed and published as the last will and testament of Cottrell Lively before us the date above:

his
Cottrall + Lively
mark

Delaney Swinney

Thomas Briggs
 Thomas J. Barker
 James A. Dunlap

At a court held for the County of Monroe on 7th day of December 1838, this last will and testament of Coterel Lively decd. was presented in court and proven by the oath of subscribing witnesses thereto and is ordered to be recorded.

Teste: Jno. Hutchinson Jr. (Cml.)"

(A1, A2, A3, A4, A5, A6, A8, A9, A10, A11, A12, A13, B5, B12, B13, B14, B15, B16, B17, B18, B24, B25, B27, B28, B29, B30, C1, C2, C3, C4, C7, C8, C9, C10, D1, D7, C9, D10, D12, D13, D14, D15, D16, D17, D18, D19, D20, D21, D22, D24, D25, D26, D27, D28, D30, D31)

FAMILY 230-231

JAMES MADDY (1740) and ANN MORRIS (1740)

JAMES MADDY, son of William Maddy (1722) and wife Elizabeth (1722), was b. abt 1740 in Fairfax Co., Va. (or possibly in Hereford Co., Eng.); d. 1783-4 in Shenandoah River, Rockingham Co., Va.; md. abt 1759 in Fairfax or Orange Co., Va., to ANN MORRIS. Ann was b. 17 Nov 1740 in Fairfax or Orange Co., Va.; d. 1844 in Monroe Co., W. Va.; bur. Lively Cem. near Orchard, Monroe, W. Va.; md. (1) James Maddy, (2) 8 Feb 1785 in Monroe (then Greenbrier) Co., W. Va., to George Parsons, by whom she had no children. Children (Maddy)--oldest children probably b. in Orange Co. and youngest children (possibly last two) b. in Rockingham Co., Va.:

WILLIAM, b. 1760; md. 25 Feb 1783 in Greenbrier (now Monroe) Co., W.Va., to ELIZABETH MANN, b. abt 1764, dau. of Jacob Mann and Barbara Miller. Children (Maddy)--older children b. in Monroe Co., youngest three or four children b. in Tenn.: Elizabeth (md. James Henderson), Sarah (md. Reuben Moss), James (md. Eliza Stinnett), Mary Ann (md. George Yoakum, Jr.), William (md. (1) Miss Posey, (2) Miss Rutledge), Mann (md. Lucy Stinnett), Nancy (md. Thomas Laughlin), John C. (md. (1) Cynthia Morris, (2) Susanna Mann), Lucinda (md. Joseph Cusie), Anna (md. Alexander Laughlin), Julia Ann (md. (1) Mr. Alderson, (2) Mr. Price, (3) Mr. Lester), and Rhoda (md. Elvan Smith).

William was a taxpayer in Rockingham Co. in 1782 (B36), served as a captain in the Virginia militia during the Revolution (D23), but moved shortly afterwards to present-day Monroe Co. and settled on Laurel Creek fork of Indian Creek. He became an extensive landowner and farmer and in 1800 paid taxes on seven tracts totaling 1511 a. (B15). On 18 Sep 1799 William was appointed a lieutenant in the Monroe Co. militia (B40). In 1806 William and family moved to Claiborne Co., Tenn., and about 1818 to present-day Loudoun Co., Tenn.; both he and his wife are buried in Tennessee (D23).

SARAH, b. 1762; d. infancy.

ABSOLOM, b. abt 1763; probably died young.

JOHN, b. 18 Sep 1764; d. 15 Mar 1840 in Monroe Co.; bur. Methodist Cem., Greenville, Monroe, W. Va.; md. 8 Aug 1785 in Greenbrier (now Monroe) Co. to ANN BARBARA MILLER. Ann B., dau. of Jacob Miller, Jr., and wife Elizabeth Fudge, was b. 12 May 1767 in Augusta Co., Va.; d. 23 Dec 1851 in Monroe Co; bur. Methodist Cem., Greenville. Children (Maddy)--b. Monroe Co.: Mary, Elizabeth (md. Richard McNeer), James (md. Elizabeth Lowry), Eleanor (md. John Hinton),

Sarah (md. Henry Neal), William (md. Mary Larew), Jacob (md. Nancy Neal), John, Jr. (md. (1) Ellen Larew, (2) Sarah Thomas, (3) Mary Arnot), Anna B. (md. David Hinton), and Charles M. (md. Mary Arnot).

John was a farmer and lived and died near Greenville. After the death of his step father, George Parsons, John took over and bought the Parsons farm located next to his own. His mother Ann nee Morris as the widow of George Parsons--and possibly even previously--resided in John's household, except near the very end of her life which she spent in the Cottrell Lively home located only a few miles away (D23).

John received the following three land surveys in Monroe Co. (B39, p. 321): (1) 5 Dec 1798, 136 a. on Laurel Creek of Indian Creek, "whereon George Parsons now lives"; (2) 15 Mar 1799, 82 a. on the northwest side of Indian Creek adjoining lands of James Maddy and William Maddy and the tract on which John then lived; and (3) 15 Mar 1799, 41 a. on Indian Creek adjoining Cottrell Lively [his brother-in-law]. In 1812 John paid taxes on 110 and 62 a. on Indian Creek near the Sinks of Laurel Creek, 267 a. on Indian Creek, and half interest in the Singing Cave (B15). It was presumably from this cave that came the stalagmite that served as John's original tombstone in the Methodist Cem. in Greenville.

MATTHEW, b. 1766; md. 4 Dec 1798 in Greenbrier (now Monroe) Co. to JUDITH CHRISTIAN, b. abt 1770. Children (Maddy)--b. Monroe Co.: Nancy, William, Lucinda (md. Mr. Vass), John, Rebecca or Sarah (md. Eber Willey), Peter (md. Elizabeth George), Alexander (md. Emaline B. Mitchell), Gabriel (md. Frances Ann Jones), Elias W. (md. Cynthia Ford), Absolom (md. Elizabeth Flint), George, Joseph, and Eber W. (md. Becky Crawford). Matthew was a farmer and resided on Stony Creek, Monroe Co.; in 1812 he paid taxes on 117 a. on Stony Creek (B15).

CHRISTOPHER, b. abt 1767; probably died young.

JAMES, b. 1768; d. 6 Oct 1824 at Laurel Creek, Monroe, W. Va.; md. 11 July 1791 in Greenbrier (now Monroe) Co. to ANNA KISSINGER. Anna, dau. of Matthias Kissinger and wife (probably Judith), was b. abt 1772 and d. 1829 in Monroe Co. Children (Maddy)--b. Monroe Co.: Mary (Polly) (md. William Garton), Susannah (md. Thomas Luster), Thomas (md. Rhoda Miller), Judith (md. Samuel Allen), Henry (md. Elizabeth Swope), Andrew Jackson (md. Marcena Miller), Jane (md. Elijah Garton), Wilson (md. (1) Nancy Swope, (2) Elizabeth Harvey), and James Alderson (md. (1) Susannah Battreall, (2) Rebecca Drago).

James, Jr., was a farmer of Monroe Co.; in 1812 he paid taxes on 248 1/2 a. at the Sinks of Laurel Creek adjoining John Maddy and on 161 a. on an adjoining tract on Laurel Creek as assignee of the heirs of George Parsons (B15). In his will dated 1 Oct 1824 and probated Oct 1824 in Monroe Co. (B18, 2:238), James Maddy (Jr.) provided for his wife Anna, named each of their nine children, and made son James his remainderman heir.

ELIAS, b. abt 1769; probably d. young.

HENRY, b. 1770; md. 4 Dec 1798 in Greenbrier (then Monroe) Co. to JANE BALLANGEE. When listed in the 1810 census (A1), Henry's household included himself and wife and two apparent sons under 10 years of age; he presumably then migrated westward.

*SARAH, b. 16 Oct 1773; d. 1 Sep 1839 in Monroe Co.; bur. Lively Cem. near Orchard; md. COTTRELL LIVELY. (Refer to Family 115-116 for further details.)

CHARLES, b. abt 1775; probably d. young.

James Maddy (1740) moved to Orange Co., Va., about 1760, accompanied by his mother Elizabeth and step-father Sylvester Murphy and possibly his new bride Ann. James Maddy and wife Ann resided in southwestern Orange County near the present town of Somerset from about 1760 to at least 1771. In addition to the tract purchased of Sylvester and Elizabeth Murphy on 28 Mar 1765 (B34, 13:495), James Maddey of Orange Co. bought of John Page and wife Elisabeth 150 a. on both sides of Blue Run on 22 Oct 1767 (B34, 15:298). This tract of land, then described as being "where said Maddy now lives" was sold by James and wife Ann of Orange Co. to James Stodghill on 28 Mar 1771 (B34, 15:302). On this same day they sold 66 a., part of a tract bought by Silvester Murphy of Moses Harris, to John Page (B34, 15:298) and 252 a. to Francis Kirtley (B34, 15:300).

From the early 1770's to 1783-4, James Maddy and family apparently resided in that part of Augusta Co. that was taken in 1778 to form Rockingham Co. James attended an estate sale of Philip Lingle in Augusta Co. on 4 Sep 1777 (B35, 5:538), suggesting that he had previously moved to that vicinity. He was recorded a tithable in 1775 in Augusta Co. in that portion later Rockingham Co. (D11). In 1782 both James Madey and William Madey [his son] were taxed in Rockingham Co. (B36) but not in subsequent years. Based on two short hitches James served in the Virginia militia (D23, p. 75), female descendants have joined DAR, James having been accepted as a soldier from Virginia (D25).

Traditionally, James died in 1783 in Rockingham Co. while swimming the Shenandoah River and carrying a log chain to return it to its owner (D23). Ann Maddy, administratrix of James Maddy's estate, posted administrative bond with the Rockingham Court on 20 June 1784 (B37); Col. William Nall and Henry Armentrout were sureties on the bond. No land ownership records have been found for James and Ann in the courthouse records of Augusta, Rockingham, or Albemarle Co., Va. At least son William migrated to then Greenbrier Co., now Monroe Co., West Virginia, in the fall of 1782 or early 1783 since he was married there to Elizabeth Mann on 25 Feb 1783 (C4). His mother Ann had migrated to Greenbrier Co. by 8 Feb 1785, on which date she married George Parsons (C4). It is reported that Ann, after moving to Greenbrier Co., "rode back to the Shenandoah to settle up the affairs of her late husband" James Maddy (D20).

Ann apparently met George Parsons, a widower with older children, shortly after coming to West Virginia. George was a farmer and had settled on Indian Creek among the Maddys. George paid taxes on 100 a. of land in Greenbrier Co. for the first time in 1786 (B14); he later paid taxes on his Indian Creek lands in Monroe Co. as follows: on 200 a. in 1799 and 1803 and on 160 a. in 1805 (B15). The 160-acre tract was left in his estate at his death, and George Parsons' heirs paid taxes on it in 1806. The last known reference to Ann Morris Maddy Parsons in the official records of Monroe Co. shows her as administratrix of the estate of her husband George Parsons, who died intestate in 1804.

An inventory of the estate of George Parsons was made on 24 Sep 1804 and was returned to the court for recording on 22 Aug 1805 (B38, 1:66). A meeting for all interested parties was called for 25 Apr 1807 at the house of John Maddy, and a record of estate settlement was returned to the court in May 1807 (B38, 1:88). On 22 June 1815 Isaac Hutchison, a court-appointed commissioner for the estate of George Parsons, conveyed the remaining 161 a. on Laurel Creek of Indian creek in Monroe Co. to William Maddy (B13, D:407). This deed referred to a chancery court meeting on 22 Nov 1809 which decreed that the children of George Parsons by a former marriage were his legal heirs; it also recorded that the 161 a. was a part of 201 a. conveyed to George by William Maddy and wife Elizabeth on 20 Aug 1799 (B13, A:16).

It is understood that Ann lived all except the last few years of her life, or even possibly excepting only the last few months, with her son John Maddy on Indian Creek. Ann and George, in fact, may have had continuous residence with her son John or at least on Maddy land during their 20-year marriage. When a 136-acre tract on Laurel Creek of Indian Creek was surveyed to John Maddy (his stepson) on 5 Dec 1798, George was already residing there (B39, p. 321). Ann reportedly died in 1844 at the age of 105 years at the home of her daughter Sarah, Mrs. Cottrell Lively (D23), where she had been residing for a short time. During her later years Ann was referred to as Granny Parsons. "She was a midwife and a practical nurse, and was always perfectly fearless, riding a big black stallion, going on her errands of helpfulness at all hours" (D23). No probate records for Ann Morris Maddy Parson have been found.

The parentage of Ann Morris remains unknown. An illustrious tradition that she was a sister of Robert Morris, Jr., of Revolutionary War fame, who was sometimes referred to as the "financier of the Revolution," has grown up and been perpetuated over the years. The tradition was noted as early as 1916 by Morton (D20), who was unable to accept the tradition as a proven fact. However, tradition once again proved to be a chronic deceiver.

A later comprehensive study of a possible Robert Morris-Ann Morris Maddy tradition necessarily reached the following conclusions (D29): "An exhaustive search of available record sources has provided no evidence that [Robert Morris] had a sister Ann.... Neither Robert (Morris), Sr., or Robert, Jr., made any reference whatsoever to Ann Morris Maddy Parsons in their wills.... In fact, no original document has been located that supports even a remote relationship between the two, other than bearing a common surname." This study noted that several Morris families were found for the appropriate time period in the records of Fairfax Co., including one John Morris residing on Goose Creek in southern Loudoun Co.; but no positive conclusions could be reached as to Ann's parentage.

(A1, B13, B15, B34, B35, B36, B37, B38, B39, B40, C4, D11, D20, D23, D25 D29)

FAMILY 456-457

MARK LIVELY (1690) and MARY (1694)

MARK LIVELY was b. abt 1690; d. 1750-1752 in Albemarle Co., Va.; md. MARY, b. abt 1694 and d. after 1750. Children (Lively)--probably all b. in Goochland Co., Va.:

BETHEL, b. abt 1729; d. 1803-4 in Nelson Co., Va.; md. (name of wife unknown). Children (Lively)--b. Va. (possibly all in Albemarle Co.: Randolph (md. Fanny Manner), Mark (md. Elizabeth Bailey), William (md. Mary), Benjamin, John (md. Elizabeth), and James (md. (1) unknown, md. (2) Sarah Smith). Bethel was mentioned in his father's will in 1750 but not located again in the records of Albemarle Co. and adjoining counties until 1782. On 6 July 1786 Bethel was granted 300 acres in Amherst Co. on the south side of Rockfish River by land of David Enoch (B3, 9:608). This grant was made by the state of Virginia on the basis of a survey made 23 Mar 1786 and an assignment by Thomas Jopling (or Jossling) to Bethel Lively in 1783. This land was located in that part of Amherst Co. that was taken to form Nelson Co. in 1807.

Bethel paid taxes on 340 a. of land in Amherst Co. in 1783 and 1787 and on 300 a. from 1788 to 1803 (B19). Bethel paid no land taxes beginning in 1804, but his son Mark began paying taxes on

300 a. in 1804 and continued through 1806. This indicated that Bethel died during late 1803 or early 1804. Bethel paid personal property taxes in Amherst Co. in 1782 and from 1787 to 1798 (B10). Tithables paid by Bethel during this period included that for his son Randolph 1788 and 1789, that for his son Mark in 1792 and 1793, and that for his sons Mark and John in 1794. Bethel was exempted beginning in 1793 from paying a title--similar to a poll tax--on himself. Presumably this explains why he is not listed in the personal property taxlists after 1798.

John, Benjamin, and James Lively of Amherst Co. on 21 Sep 1805 conveyed their interests in a tract of land left to them "by their father in his will" on the south fork of Rockfish River adjoining lands of David Enucks to Mark Lively of Amherst Co. (B20, K:313). Then on 1 Oct 1805 Randolph Lively of Kanawha Co., W. Va., deeded to Mark Lively his interests in "land given him by his father" on the south side of Rockfish River (B20, K:363). Later records prove that this Mark Lively had inherited a portion of the estate of Bethel Lively and was thus Bethel's son Mark. Another son of Bethel is revealed in a conveyance of land then in Nelson Co. (B21, 2:364); on 25 Mar 1816 William Lively and wife Mary of Nelson Co. deeded to Thomas Warren a tract of 51 1/2 a. on Rockfish River previously received "by queste of the land belonging to the estate of Bethel Lively, deceased." Neither the will of Bethel nor a record of its probaton can be located today in the records of Nelson, Albemarle, or Amherst Co.

WILLIAM, b. abt 1731; no record of marriage or family. On 20 Jan 1762 one William Lifflee gave a promissory note to Peter Gillium, which had been witnessed by Hezekiah Jones and Benjamin Lifflee (B8); and Hezekiah Jones, as assignee of Peter Gillium, later obtained a summons for William to appear and pay his indebtedness. Also, one William Lifely was a witness on 9 Feb 1759 of a conveyance by Thomas Fitzpatrick to William Hamner of 497 a. in Albemarle Co. on Hardaway (sic Hardware?) Branches (B6, 2:118). These references probably all pertain to William son of Mark, but no later reference has been found to him.

On 7 Sep 1795 a William Lively of Augusta Co. purchased from William Owens and wife Mary tracts of 37 a. and 123 a. (or 173 a.) in Albemarle Co. on both sides of Licking Hole Run (B6, 11:458). These two adjoining tracts, additionally described as being on Buck's Elbow amongst the Great Mountains, were sold by William Lively and wife Anne of Hanover Co., Va., to Robert Craig of Augusta Co. on 15 Apr 1796; witnesses to the later sale were Burbridge Anderson, John Key, and John Lively (B26, 1:60). However, there is no direct evidence that this William Lively was William (1731) of Mark.

JOHN, b. abt 1733; d. 1804-5 in Albemarle Co.; md. ELIZABETH, b. abt 1745 and d. after 1814. Children (Lively)--b. Albemarle Co.: Charles (md. Elizabeth Bishop), Shadrack (probable son; md. Sally Burrus), John (probably md. Mary Jameson), Agnes (Aggy), and Jenny. John Lively paid taxes on 126 a. of land in Albemarle Co. from 1782 to 1802 (B7). This was presumably the land received by will from his father Mark Lively. On 23 Oct 1800 John Lively and wife Elizabeth deeded 128 a. on Buck Island Creek "where we now live" to Charles Lively (B6, 14:228); the deed was recorded in 1802. Then on 20 Oct 1802 John Lively of Albemarle Co. deeded personal property to his daughters Aggy Lively and Jenny Lively (B6, 14:229). The latter deed was witnessed by Cannon Lively, a son of John's brother Bethel.

John Lively paid personal property taxes in Albemarle Co. in 1782 and 1785 through 1802 (B22). He was listed again in 1804 but paid no taxes, possibly having no remaining taxable personal property or being exempt. In 1805 through 1807 John Lively's estate was listed but paid no personal property taxes (B22). Although John died in 1804 or 1805, no will or intestate records have been found for him. In 1810 the census taken in Albemarle Co. shows the household of Elizabeth Lively included a male under 10 years of age, a female over 45 years of age, and two females aged 26-45 years (A7). John Jr. has been added as a son of John based on his association in the Albemarle Co. personal property taxlists with John (Sr.).

JOSEPH, b. abt 1736; d. 1793 in Amherst (now Nelson) Co.; md. MARY CASH, b. abt 1740, dau. of Howard Cash. Children (Lively)--probably all b. in Albemarle or Amherst Co.: Joseph (md. Sarah McGehee or Tiller), Benjamin, John (md. Clara Carnall), Mark (md. Mary Hill), Robert Cash (md. Elizabeth Bethell), Ruth (md. William Griffin), Nancy (md. Peter Johnson), and Kesiah (md. Zachariah Peters). Joseph Lively paid personal property taxes in Amherst Co. from 1782 to 1793 (B10); personal property included one slave through this period. Included in Joseph's tax assessment during various years were sons Mark, John, Robert Cash, and Benjamin. The oldest son Joseph was already being taxed separately by 1782 when the taxlists were begun.

Joseph paid land taxes in Amherst Co. in 1782 and 1783 on 398 and 400 a. and from 1787 to 1793 on 398 a. (B19); his estate paid taxes on the 398 a. in 1794. On 4 Aug 1777 Joseph bought 400 a. of land on Thresher's Creek in Amherst Co. from James Smith and Pierce Wade (B20, D:447); he and his wife Mary sold this tract to Robert Cash, all parties of Amherst Co., on 5 Mar 1780 (B20, E:218). A second tract of 400 a., located on Dutch Creek and purchased from John Harmer on 1 Sep 1782, was sold on 1 Jan 1787 by Joseph and Mary to William Cabell (B20, F:110). The origin of the 398-acre tract has not been determined but may have been a land grant.

Joseph died intestate in Amherst (now Nelson) Co., Va., in 1793 (B11, 3:282, 293, 450). On 22 Oct 1793 letters of administration were granted to Mark Lively, a son, with John Hill and William Hill as bondsmen. An inventory of the estate of Joseph Lively made on 16 Dec 1793 included a considerable number of livestock, an old negro woman Sarah, a negro woman Betty, and a negro boy George. The Joseph Lively estate sale on 19 Aug 1797 listed a few of the relatives and many neighbors as purchasers.

The 398 a. left in Joseph's estate was located on Rucker's and Babb's Creek in Nelson Co. and was later divided into nine tracts of approximately 44 acres each. The five sons of Joseph Lively and daughter Ruth have been identified through the sales of these lands (B20, H:72, 185, 198, 215). Eight heirs (shown above) were recorded in a common sale in Albemarle Co. of personal property belonging to Joseph's estate on 5 June 1797 (B23, 1795-8:331-5). What happened to the remaining 9th part or 44 acres in the estate partition is uncertain. No mention of Joseph's wife Mary after his death has been found.

BENJAMIN, b. abt 1737; d. 1806 in Albemarle Co.; md. MARTHA, b. abt 1741 and d. after 1809. Children (Lively)--b. Albemarle Co.: Mary (md. Walter Burrus), Benjamin (md. Ruth Bostic), Joseph (md. (1) Francis Maddy, md. (2) Mildred Dick), Judy (md. Robert Burrus), Martha (md. Joshua Burrus), Cannon (md. Lucy Duncan), and Mark (md. (1) Rachel Mansfield, md. (2) Catherine). Benjamin Lively

resided on Buck Island Creek in Albemarle Co. Personal property taxed between 1782 and 1806 included from one to eight slaves; sons jointly taxed with Benjamin were Benjamin, Jr., Cannon, and Mark.

From 1782 to 1794 Benjamin paid taxes on 312 a. and from 1795 to 1806 on 312 acres plus an additional 400 a. (B7). The 312-acre tract presumably came partly from the estate of his father Mark Lively. The 400-acre tract was purchased by Benjamin from Zachary Toliaferro on 13 Feb 1794 (B6, 11:254); it was located adjacent to Mark Lively's line near the south side of Buck Island Creek and adjoining Martin King's Road.

Benjamin Lively made his will on 13 May 1806, and it was recorded in Albemarle Co. on 3 Nov 1806 (B5, 4:245). Cannon was devised 350 a. to include the plantation "I formerly lived on." Following a life right to Benjamin's wife, his son Mark was devised "the tract I now live on," this "to be divided from my other plantation" by a line to extend from Christopher Hudson's on the west. Son Cannon and a friend Benjamin Lacy were appointed executors. Ten slaves were devised by Benjamin to his heirs. One slave, a boy George, was devised to son Joseph and removed with Joseph to West Virginia. On 4 Nov 1809 Martha Lively [widow of Benjamin] conveyed to her son Mark, both then of Albemarle Co., her dower rights on the tract where Mark was then living (B6, 17:77).

After coming to America, probably shortly before 1714, it is likely that Mark Lively lived in only two communities, both in Virginia: firstly, in the Tuckahoe community of eastern Goochland Co. and secondly, on Buck Island Creek of southeastern Albemarle Co. Prior to 1727 both Goochland and Albemarle Co. were included in their parent county of Henrico. When Goochland Co. was divided out of Henrico Co. in 1727, their common boundary in part was the main Tuckahoe Creek. The Buck Island Creek community, lying about 45-50 miles west of Tuckahoe Creek, remained part of Goochland Co. until 1744 when it was included in the new county of Albemarle.

Mark is referred to as a "transported person," i.e. his transportation was paid by someone else, in the following two land grants, dated 1714 and 1717 respectively. On 16 June 1714 Amos Ladd was granted 1085 a. in Henrico Co. on the north side of James River, the location given more specifically as being on Beaver Ponds Branch of James River; this land grant was based on the importation of 21 persons including Marke Liveholy (D2, 3:152). Subsequently, on 15 July 1717 Dorothy Pleasants was granted 463 a. in Henrico Co. on the north side of James River; this land grant was based on the importation of 10 persons including Mark Liveholy (D2, 3:193).

It was apparently technically illegal for two claimants to list the same person as a headright in obtaining land grants, but both claims above apparently utilized the same person, i.e. Mark Lively. It appears that Mark had immigrated to America as a single person, probably as a young man in his later teens or early twenties. This event probably occurred only a short time prior to 16 June 1714, the first documented date for him in Virginia. After coming to Virginia he probably served a period of indenture to those paying for his transportation.

In July 1730 a case of trespass, i.e. Dudley Diggs vs. Mark Lively, was dismissed; the plaintiff failed to prosecute (B1, 2:9). It is noted that Dudley Diggs about this same time also brought suits for ejectment against Stephen Hughes, Thomas Dirkius, Patrick Mulling, Wm. Arrington, James Taylor, Richard Birks, and John Williams; this was apparently done in an attempt to prevent these men from proving up individual land titles. Similarly, in

December ;1731 a case of trespass, i.e. William Randolph, Richard Randolph, John Randolph. and John Fflowing(?), executors of Thomas Randolph, deceased, vs. Mark Lively, was also dismissed as not prosecuted (B1, 3:25). This case involved the prestigious Randolph family through which Pres. Thomas Jefferson descended. Whether these trespass cases were mere scare tactics, were settled out of court, or merely dropped for some other reason is uncertain.

In September 1736 the Goochland Co. Court (B1, 2:192) found Elizabeth wife of Robert Pox(?) guilty of stealing a grubbing hoe from Mark Lively. Her punishment was receiving five lashes on her bare back at the common whipping post; and her husband was ordered to pay court costs and a lawyer's fee. Another reference is made to Mark Lively on 22 Dec 1738 in the will of Robert Adams of Goochland Co., said will being probated in Goochland Co. on 17 Jan 1740 (B2, 3:305). Among other specifics in the will, Robert left to his daughter Lucy a tract of 550 a. "where the mine was dug and where Mark Lively lived."

The first proof of land ownership by Mark was dated 22 Sep 1739, when Mark Lifelee received a grant of 90 a. from King George the Second by William Gooch, governor of Virginia (B3, 18:390). This tract was described as located in Goochland Co. on both sides of Reedy Branch of Tuckahoe Creek adjoining lands of Joseph Watkins, dec., Charles Johnson, Robert Adams, and Robert Cawthorn. In July 1742, on his own petition to the court, Mark Lively was made levy free, i.e. excused from paying property taxes (B1; 5:85).

Further information about Mark's farm in Goochland Co. is found in a deed dated 18 Oct 1743 (B1, 4:248). In this deed John Graves, Jr., and wife Lucy (nee Adams, dau. of Robert Adams) conveyed a tract of land to John Sanders; all parties were residents of Goochland Co. This tract of land was described as 350 a. on branches of Tuckahoe Creek bounded (sic adjoining) land "which Robert Adams laid off to Mark Lively," while also referencing "Mark Lively's line." Thus, it appears that Robert Adams had yielded a portion of his land claim so that Mark could receive a 90-acre grant.

On 2 Mar 1748 a plot of 380 a. of land on Buck Island Creek in Albemarle Co. was surveyed for Mark Lively; the survey was made by Thos. Turpin, associate surveyor (B4, Book 1, Part 1). The following year on 15 Aug 1749 Mark Lively of Albemarle Co. conveyed his 90-acre farm in Goochland Co. to William Ford; the tract was then described as lying on both sides of Reedy Branch of Tuckahoe Creek adjoining lands of Joseph Watkins, dec., Charles Johnson, Robert Adams, and Robert Cawthorn (B2, 6:10). Mark's wife Mary released her dower on 2 Mar 1748, and the deed was ordered to be recorded. It is noted that the surname in the text of the conveyance was spelled both "Lively" and "Lifely."

Mark Lively received patent on 1 June 1750 to his 380-acre tract in Albemarle Co. located on the south side of and adjoining Buck Island Creek (B3, 30:139). At his new home on Buck Island Creek Mark was not destined to live long. On 3 Nov 1750 he made his will (B5, 1:32); his death occurred prior to 11 June 1752 when his will was probated. In his will Mark left a life right in his Buck Island Creek farm to his wife Mary. To sons John, Joseph, and Benjamin he give equal parts of the land "I now live on" after the death of "their mother." Carpenter tools, wedges, and axes, etc., were equally divided among these three sons. Son Bethel received by will 20 shillings and four large rope hooks; son William received one shilling. It is presumed that the latter two, as the eldest sons, had previously received the bulk of their inheritance.

Mark appointed his wife Mary and a friend Thomas Cawthorn as executors of his will; the will was witnessed by Thomas Cawthorn and William Woodson. Security on Mary's executor bond was provided by Samuel Talliaferro, Thomas Jopling (or Jossling), and Henry Burruss. The Albemarle Co. Court ordered an

appraisal of the estate of Mark Lively and commissioned John Henderson, John Smith, and Tho. Bibb to do so (B5, 1:40); the appraisal was made on 2 July 1752, and return was made on the estate on 9 July 1752, but details of the appraisal were not recorded.

The 380-acre farm of mark Lively, as described in the original land grant, laid on the south side of main Buck Island Creek; it was enclosed within a triangle formed by the intersection of present-day Road 620 and Buck Island Creek on the northeast, Woodridge (originally called McGehee's Old Field) on the southeast, and Blenheim on the southwest. The farm was bounded on the north by Buck Island Creek and Kirby Hill and enclosed a southwest branch of the creek. Early land mark roads in the area were the Secretary's Road which connected Woodridge and Blenheim (now Road 708) and Martin King's Road (now Road 618) which intercepted the Secretary's Road near Blenheim. Although the boundaries have changed and the land sold and resold many times since then, Mark's land in 1979 (D5) was described as follows: the northern third owned by August Schwarzenboeck, the middle third by Edwin Strother, and the southern third by the estate of Carrie L. Bishop.

The means and exact demarcations in the division of the 380-acre tract "in equal parts" to sons John, Joseph, and Benjamin as specified in Mark's will are unclear. No record of Joseph's share has been found, but he may have assigned his share to Benjamin; Joseph soon moved to Amherst Co., Va. John's portion was apparently the 126-acres he paid taxes on from 1782 to 1802 (B7) and deeded by John and wife Elizabeth on 23 Oct 1800 as 128 acres on Buck Island Creek "where we now live" to son Charles (B6, 14:228). Son Benjamin also continued to reside on Buck Island creek and his division was presumably within the 312 a. he paid taxes on during the 1782-1794 period (B7). Beginning in 1795 he also paid taxes on an additional 400 a. which adjoined Mark Lively's original tract on the west and Martin King's road on the south, this 400-acre tract having been purchased on 13 Feb 1794 from Zachary Taliaferro (B6, 11:254). When Zachariah Taliaferro purchased this 400 a. from Samuel Taliaferro on 14 Sep 1758, it was described as being on both sides of Buck Island creek of Rivanna River, being on both sides of Martin King's Road, and adjoining "Mark Lively's line near the south side of the creek and thence north and west crossing said creek" (B6, 2:63).

One Mark Lively, an inhabitant of Albemarle Co., Va., was in Capt. Charles Ellis's Co. called into active service for the defence of the colony prior to Sep 1758 (and presumably shortly prior to this date) (D3, 7:203). Although Mark Lively of Buck Island Creek had died by 1752, it seems likely that the serviceman Mark Lively was connected to him in some way. That the elder Mark Lively (1690) had daughters and sons other than the five sons mentioned in his will is possible; and it is noted that the family of Mark's son William are as yet unknown.

It seems probable that Mark found his bride Mary amongst one of the neighboring families of eastern Goochland Co. (Note: although there has been speculation that Mark might have had a former spouse and by her had the apparent eldest sons Bethel and William, there is no definite evidence of a former spouse found thus far.) Mary's maiden names is unproven but Burris, Cawthorn, Tiller, and Adams are all names of associated families in Goochland Co. Speculation more recently has been directed to the McGee/McGehee family for Mary's origins.

A McGee family resided early in the Hanover/Goochland Co. vicinity and then moved westward to Albemarle Co. about the same time as the Mark Lively family and lived near them at the latter place. One Lively McGee was the son of William McGee, who resided lastly near present-day Woodridge (D6). This Lively McGee made the trek to Monroe Co., W. Va., about the same time as Cottrell and Joseph Lively; in Monroe Co. he lived near them on Hans Creek before moving on to Jackson Co., Ohio. This McGee or McGehee family has been

written up in some detail by Grider (D4). Although this family history does not specify a McGee-Lively marriage, it does leave ample gaps in the family account to enable it.

Will of Mark Lively

"In the name of God, Amen; I, Mark Lively being very sick and weak in body but of perfect sound memory thanks to God for the same do make and ordain this my last will and testament in manner and form following: first, I recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God and my body to the earth to be buried at the discretion of my executors.

Impr. I give to my son Bethel Lively twenty shillings and four rope hooks. I give to my son William one shilling. I give to my three sons John Lively, Joseph Lively, and Benjamin Lively the land I now live on to be equally divided amongst them after the death of their mother and the carpenters tools, wedges and axes for the use of these three boys above mentioned. I give all the rest of my estate to my loving wife Mary so long as she shall remain a widow and after her widowhood or death to be equally divided amongst the rest of my children. I also nominate and appoint my loving wife Mary and my friend Thomas Cawthorn my executors of this my last will and testament whereunto I have set my hand and seal this third day of November 1750.

Signed sealed published in the
presence of: Thomas Cawthorn
William Woodson

Mark Lively (Ls)

At a court held for Albemarle County the 11th day of June 1752. This last will and testament of Mark Lively decd. was proved by Thomas Cawthorn and on the motion of Mary Lively widow executrix therein named who made oath according to law certificate is granted her for obtaining a probate thereof in due form giving security on which she with Samuel Talliaferro, Thomas Jossling, and Henry Burrus her securities entered into and acknowledged their bond for the said Mary's due and faithful performance of the said will.

Test, John Nicholas, CLK"

(Albemarle Co., Va., Wills, 1:32)

{A7, B1, B2, B3, B4, B5, B6, B7, B8, B10, B11, B19, B20, B21, B22, B23, B26, C5, C6, D1, D2, D3, D4, D5, D6, D9, D10}

FAMILY 460-461

WILLIAM MADDY (1722) and ELIZABETH (1722)

WILLIAM MADDY was b. abt 1722 probably in England (probably bapt. 4 Oct 1722 at Dorstone, Hereford, Eng.); d. 1754 (letters of administration dated 20 Nov 1754) in Fairfax Co., Va.; md. abt 1739 to ELIZABETH, b. abt 1722. Elizabeth md. (1) William Maddy and (2) in 1756 to Sylvester Murphy. Children (Maddy)--b. Fairfax Co.:

*JAMES, b. abt 1740; d. 1783-4 in Rockingham Co., Va.; md. abt 1759 to ANN MORRIS. (See also Family 230-231 for further details.)
MARY (POLLY), b. abt 1752; md. 9 Dec 1783 to ADAM MANN.
ELIZABETH, b. abt 1754; md. 8 Feb 1785 to PAUL LONG.
FRANCES, b. abt 1756; reportedly md. JOSEPH LIVELY, son of Benjamin Lively and wife Martha of Albemarle Co., Va.

It has been concluded by Olive Maddy (D23)--and seems probable--that William Maddy was the same as William Maddy, son of James Maddy and wife Eleanor, christened 4 Oct 1722 at Dorstone, Hereford, Eng. This James Maddy, in turn, had been christened 12 Aug 1690 at Dorstone, a son of William Maddy and wife Joan [his second wife]. The Dorstone church records also recorded that Elizabeth Maddy, dau. of James and Eleanor, was christened 20 Oct 1720. Although the circumstantial evidence seems strong, it has not been documented that William Maddy baptized 1722 at Dorstone is the same as the ancestor William Maddy of Fairfax Co., Va. If this hypothesis is accepted or later proven, then the Maddy line coming down to William Maddy (1722) would be as follows (D23):

- 3680-3681. WATKIN MADDY of Manor of Fowminde, Parish of Dorstone; b. abt 1613 at Dorstone; letters of administration 22 May 1677; name of wife unknown.
- 1840-1841. WILLIAM MADDY of Nant-y-Barrd, Parish of Dorstone; b. abt 1632 at Dorstone; md. (1) Catherine Jennings, md. (2) JOAN (the mother of James below). Children by Joan (Maddy): Elizabeth, Joan, and James.
- 920-921. JAMES MADDY of Pen-y-Pont, Dorstone; bapt. 12 Aug 1690 at Dorstone; md. ELEANOR; disappears from Dorstone shortly after 1725; may have come to America about 1730. Known children (Maddy): Elizabeth and William.
- 460-461. WILLIAM MADDY, bap. 4 Oct 1722 at Dorstone; came to America; d. 1755 in Fairfax Co., Va.; md. ELIZABETH.

The first documented reference to William Maddy in Virginia was on 19 Jan 1749 when one Gabriel Adams of Truro Parish, Fairfax Co., Va., bequeathed to his eldest son the home plantation of 100 a. then being "least" to William Maddy (B31, A:428). On 24 Nov 1754 bond was posted by Elizabeth Maddy of Fairfax Co. to administer the estate of William Maddy of Fairfax Co., deceased (B32, 1752-1782:19). Then on 20 Apr 1756 Elizabeth, wife of Sylvester Murphy and administratrix of William Maddy's estate, filed an inventory of said estate, which was accepted by the Fairfax Co. Court (B9, B:106).

That James Maddy (1740) was a member of this family was documented in a land conveyance dated 16 Oct 1755 between Robert Carter of Westmoreland Co. to Sylvester Murphy of Fairfax Co. (B9, D233). This document was a lease of 113 a. on Goose Creek in Cameron Parish, Fairfax (later Loudoun) Co., "for and during the natural lives of Sylvester Murphy, Elizabeth Murphy, and James Madey, eldest son by her former husband" [sic William Maddy]. William Maddy's widow Elizabeth had married Sylvester Murphy about 1756. Although neither William Maddy nor Sylvester Murphy have been found as land owners in the records of either Fairfax or Loudoun Co., Sylvester on 19 May 1758 was the plaintiff in Sylvester Murphy vs. James Goolding, a case for trespass and assault and battery in Fairfax Co. (B33, p. 245).

About 1760 the Maddy-Murphy family moved from Loudoun Co. to western Orange Co., Va. On 23 Oct 1760 Sylvester Murphy, then recorded as a resident of Louisa Co., was conveyed by Moses Harris and wife of Orange Co. a tract of 125 a. on the Great Mountains on branches of Swift Creek (B34, 13:133). On 24 Apr 1764 Silvester Murphy of Orange Co. gave a mortgage on his livestock and other personal property to Francis Kirtley (possibly later Keatley) of Augusta Co., Va. (B34, 13:417). The last known references to Elizabeth and husband Sylvester Murphy of Orange Co. were in 1765 and 1769. On 28 Mar 1765 they conveyed to James Mades [sic James Maddy, Elizabeth's son] a tract of 60 a. at the foot of the Great Mountain on Swift Run (B34, 13:495); and on 21 Apr 1769 they conveyed to John Jones of Orange Co. a tract of 100 a. "on Swift Run adjoining James Madies line" (B34, 15:49).

(B9, B31, B32, B33, B34, B35, B36, D23)

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

A. Census Records

- A1. 1810 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A2. 1820 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A3. 1830 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A4. 1850 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A5. 1880 Census of Nodaway Co., Mo.
- A6. 1850 Census of Vinton Co., Ohio.
- A7. 1810 Census of Albemarle Co., Va.
- A8. 1860 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A9. 1840 Census of Jackson Co., Ohio.
- A10. 1850 Census of Vinton Co., Ohio.
- A11. 1870 Census of Monroe Co., W. Va.
- A12. 1840 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A13. 1850 Census of Jackson Co., Ohio.

B. Land, Probate, Tax, and Court Records.

- B1. Goochland Co., Va., Court Order Books.
- B2. Goochland Co., Va., Wills and Deeds.
- B3. Virginia Land Patents and Grants, Virginia State Library, Richmond, Va.
- B4. Albemarle Co., Va., Surveyor's Book.
- B5. Albemarle Co., Va., Wills.
- B6. Albemarle Co., Va., Deeds.
- B7. Albemarle Co., Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B8. Albemarle Co., Va., Court Papers, 1744-1783; by Benjamin B. Weisinger III; 1987.
- B9. Fairfax Co., Va., Deeds.
- B10. Amherst Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B11. Amherst Co., Va., Wills.
- B12. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B13. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B14. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B15. Monroe Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B16. Sims Index to West Virginia Land Grants; by Edgar B. Sims; 1952; Rose City Press, Charleston, W. Va.
- B17. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B18. Monroe Co., W. Va., Wills and Inventories.
- B19. Amherst Co., Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B20. Amherst Co., Va., Deeds.
- B21. Nelson Co., Va., Wills.
- B22. Albemarle Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B23. Albemarle Co., Va., Court Order Books.
- B24. Monroe Co., W. Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B25. Albemarle Co., Va., Road Order Book.
- B26. Albemarle District Court (Va.) Deed Book.
- B27. Greenbrier Co., Va., Land Grants.
- B28. Vinton Co., Ohio, Wills.
- B29. Vinton Co., Ohio, Probate Court Journal.
- B30. Jackson Co., Ohio, Wills.
- B31. Fairfax Co., Va., Wills.
- B32. Fairfax Co., Va., Bonds.
- B33. Fairfax Co., Va., Minute Book.
- B34. Orange Co., Va., Deeds.
- B35. Augusta Co., Va., Wills.
- B36. Rockingham Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B37. Rockingham Co., Va., Administrative Bonds.
- B38. Monroe Co., W. Va., Fiduciary Records.
- B39. Monroe Co., W. Va., Surveys.

B40. Monroe Co., W. Va., Court Orders.

C. Vital, Church, and Cemetery Records.

- C1. Lively Cem., near Orchard, Monroe, W. Va.
- C2. Broyles Cem., Mud Run of Rich Creek, Monroe, W. Va.
- C3. Composite Lists of Marriage Bonds, Parental Permits, and Minister Returns, Monroe Co., W. Va. (1799-1850); by Aubrey O. Smith (comp.); 1962; Beckley, W. Va.
- C4. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Marriage Records.
- C5. Albemarle Co., Va., Marriage Records.
- C6. Amherst Co., Va., Marriage Bonds.
- C7. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deaths Records.
- C8. Vinton Co., Ohio, Marriages.
- C9. Jackson Co., Ohio, Marriages.
- C10. Thrasher-Lively Cem., Monroe Co., W. Va.

D. Compiled and Miscellaneous Records.

- D1. Livelys of America, 1690-1968; by John F. Vallentine; 1971; Nat. Assoc. Lively Families, Butler, Ala.; 892 p.
- D2. Cavaliers and Pioneers, 3 vols.; by Nell Marion Nugent; 1979; Va. State Lib., Richmond, Va.
- D3. Henning's Statutes at Large (Virginia).
- D4. McGehee Descendants, 2 vols.; by Ethel C. Woodall Grider; 1989; Gateway Press, Baltimore, Md.
- D5. "Plot Mark Lively Farm 1748;" NALF Newsletter, Dec 1979; p. 3.
- D6. Albemarle County in Virginia; by (Rev.) Edgar Woods; 1901.
- D7. Revolutionary War Pension and Bounty Land Warrant Applications, National Archives, Washington, D.C.
- D8. Personal Records of Mrs. Ora Silkwood, Charleston, W. Va.
- D9. Personal Records of Lester N. Lively, Ballengee, W. Va.
- D10. Memoirs: My Life Among Pioneer West Virginians; by Walter J. Pack; 1955; Unpublished mss. (in possession of Mrs. Elizabeth Feer, Scarborough, N.Y.).
- D11. History of Rockingham Co., Va.; by John W. Wayland; 1912; Ruebush-Elkins Co., Dayton, Va.
- D12. Family Group Records Archives, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D13. Personal Records of Aubrey O. Smith, Beckley, W. Va.
- D14. Personal Records of Miss Virginia Beeler, Elizabeth City, Ky.
- D15. Personal Records of Mrs. Eva B. Pack, Orlando, Fla.
- D16. Personal Records of Miss Olive Fosha, Alton, Ill.
- D17. Personal Records of Henry Mooney Lively, Creamery, W. Va.
- D18. Personal Records of James E. Mann, Bluefield, W. Va.
- D19. Personal Records of Mrs. Leona L. Peck, Peterstown, W. Va.
- D20. History of Monroe Co., West Virginia; by Oren F. Morton; 1916; McClure Pub. Co., Staunton, Va.
- B21. Sons of the Revolution in the State of West Virginia; by W. Va. Soc. Sons of the Rev.; 1941; Scholl Printing Co., Parkersburg, W. Va.
- B22. Membership Application Papers; Sons of the American Revolution.
- B23. Us Maddys; by Olive Maddy, with Addendum by John K. Maddy; 1985 (Rev.); Walsworth Pub. Co., Marceline, Mo.; 280 & 244 p.
- B24. West Virginians in the American Revolution; by Ross B. Johnson; 1959; West Augusta Hist. & Gen. Soc., Parkersburg, W. Va.
- B25. DAR Patriot Index; by National Soc. of DAR; 1990 (Centennial Ed.); Washington, D.C.
- D26. Manuscript of James H. Lively on Lively Genealogy; 1912; Mss. (copy in possession of John F. Vallentine, Springville, Utah).

- D27. Albemarle: Jefferson Country, 1727-1976; by John Hammond Moore; 1976; Univ. Press of Va., Charlottesville, Va.
- D28. Jefferson's Albemarle; Virginia Conservation Comm. 1941 (2nd Ed.).
- D29. The Robert Morris-Ann Maddy Tradition; by John F. Vallentine; 1973; Amer. Genealogist 49(3):129-137.
- D30. Personal Records of Alvin L. Anderson, Washington, D.C.
- D31. Personal Records of Ella Lively Kessler (deceased).

CARPER-PECK-BORDEN-SOVAIN ANCESTRAL LINE

FAMILY 58-59

JOSEPH CARPER (1802) and JANE SHUMATE (1809)

JOSEPH CARPER, son of Isaac Carper (1775) and wife Susannah Sovain (1774), was b. 27 Dec 1802 near Fincastle in Botetourt Co., Va.; d. 9 Feb 1880 in Raleigh Co., W. Va.; bur. Grandview Cem., Raleigh Co.; md. 16 Sep 1824 in Monroe Co., W. Va., to JANE (JENNIE) SHUMATE. Jane, dau. of Hardin Shumate (1783) and wife Elizabeth Leach (1788), was b. 17 Dec 1809 at Rich Creek, Giles, Va.; d. 18 Dec 1891 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem. Children (Carper)--all b. in Monroe Co.:

- *HESTER ELIZABETH, b. 23 Nov 1825; d. 27 May 1883 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem.; md. 20 June 1844 in Monroe Co. to BARTLEY PACK. (Refer to Family 28-29 for additional details.)
- ANDREW JACKSON, b. 1 Aug 1827; d. 22 Feb 1909 at Grandview, Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem.; md. (1) 1 Feb 1849 in Monroe Co. to ELIZA JANE PACK. Eliza Jane, dau. of Loammi Pack and wife Jane Lively, was b. 17 Nov 1826 at Brush Creek; d. 8 Sep 1895 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem. Children (Carper)--all b. Table Rock, Raleigh, W. Va.: Samuel Lewis (md. Virginia F. Allen), Mary Jane (md. William M. Miller), Chester Bullard (md. (1) Polly Ann Allen, (2) Virginia), Elizabeth Leach (md. David Robertson), Alexander Campbell, James Barclay, Sarah Ann, Benjamin Franklin (md. Emily Josie Williams), Joseph (md. Dot Hurt), Clara Burke (md. Joseph A. Bruce), Luther (md. Tamsia E. Lore), Retta (md. Robert B. Stewart), and Fannie Lee (md. Gratton L. Haney).

Andrew J. md. (2) 16 June 1896 to Mrs. Mary Ellen Bair, widow of Abraham Bair. Joseph was survived by his second wife, by whom he had no children. Andrew J. was a preacher as well as gunsmith in Raleigh Co. (D15).

- GEORGE WASHINGTON, b. 7 Apr 1831; d. 5 Jan 1910 at Promise, Wallowa, Ore.; bur. Promise; md. 28 Nov 1849 in Fayette Co., W. Va., to DELILAH PHIPPS. Delilah, dau. of Fielding Phipps and wife Elenor, was b. 21 Nov 1833 in Raleigh Co.; d. 4 Apr 1904 at Promise; bur. Promise. Children (Carper)--b. Raleigh Co.: Mary Elizabeth, Cynthia Jane (md. Harvey Bennett), Eliza Ann (md. William Isaac Sannar), Rachel Clementine (md. Thomas Bennett), Nancy Susan (md. James Henry Fleshman), Louise Evaline (md. Wilson Lee Lively), Virginia W. (md. Sparrell Tyree), Joseph Kyle (md. Laticia Lively), Lucinda Elender, John William (md. Almeda Williams), Charles Paris (md. Bertha Jane Doud), Walter Ashby (md. Lula May Barton), and Matilda Bell. George W. md. (2) Caroline Griffith, b. 1835 in Monroe Co., W. Va.
- WILLIAM DECATUR., b. 27 Dec 1832; d. 6 Nov 1925 at Dexter, Chaves, N. Mex.; bur. Hagerman, Chaves, N. Mex.; md. (1) 8 Dec 1852 (or 1854) to NANCY WARDEN, b. 1834 in Pulaski Co., Va., dau. of Thomas Warden and wife Martha Black. Children (Carper)--b. Raleigh Co.: Mary Ellen (Molly) (md. Alfred M. Moore), John Henry (md. Lockie Ellen Hurt), Martha (md. Bishop C. Woods), William J., Daughter, Nancy E. (md. Aaron F. Simms), Margaret Ann (md. James F. Quisenberry), Mary Elizabeth, Emily (md. L. M. C. Carter), and Sarah E. (Sally) (md. H. S. Warden). William D. md. (2) 29 Aug 1874 (div.) in Kanawha Co. to THURSEY QUESENBERY; md. (3) 1888 to MARY PRINGLE, who died in 1889; md. (4) 19 June 1891 in Botetourt Co. to BELLE J. LEMON. No children by last three marriages.

William D. and last wife moved to Roswell, N. Mex., where he purchased a ranch nearby, but also had a printing press in Roswell (D13).

- SUSAN JANE, b. 10 Sep 1835; d. 22 Mar 1914 prob. in Raleigh Co.; bur. Church of Christ Cem., Prosperity, Raleigh Co.; md. 4 May 1854 in Raleigh Co. to DANIEL WILLIAMS. Daniel, son of John Williams and Susannah Stover, was b. 8 Mar 1833 in Raleigh Co.; d. 3 Aug 1906 prob. in Raleigh Co.; bur. Church of Christ Cem. Children (Williams)--b. Raleigh Co.: Charles G. (md. Hilda Baird), Andrew Chester (md. Alice Scott), Joseph M. (md. Alice Hutchinson), Mary Alice (md. John Callaway), Elizabeth Jane (md. Albert Jenkins Shumate), John Lee (md. (1) Emma Scott, (2) Saline Bryant), Dexter Cowgill (md. Alethia E. Ellison), Margaret (md. Robert Mankin), and Anna F. (md. Joe E. Bright). This family resided at Prosperity, W. Va.
- ISAAC PERRY, b. 1837; d. 1909 in Idaho; md. 31 Jan 1861 in Raleigh Co. to MARY ELIZABETH SCOTT, b. 1842 in W. Va., dau. of James Scott and wife Rachel. Children (Carper)--b. W. Va.: Orville, Carrie (male), and Dora. Isaac P. served in the Union Army during the Civil War.
- MARY ANN, b. 1839; d. 1886 at Grandview; bur. Grandview Cem.; md. 1863 in Raleigh Co. to HENRY A. SMITH. Henry A., son of John Smith and wife Hannah (or Mary) Martin, was b. 1841 in W. Va.; d. 1928; bur. Grandview Cem.; md. (1) Mary Ann Carper; md. (2) Arlisha. Children (Smith)--b. Raleigh Co.: John Milton (md. Ella Warren), Edith C., Ida., Virginia F. (md. C. H. Krise), Kenly, Paul, Isaac G., and Henry F.
- HARDIN HOUSTON (HUSE), b. 19 Mar 1842; d. 15 Feb 1871 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem.; md. 24 Nov 1864 in Mercer Co., W. Va., to MALINDA SWINNEY, b. 12 Dec 1848 in Monroe Co., dau. of Archibald Swinney and wife Lucinda Pack. Son Andrew Lawson Carper (md. Eliza Cook). Served in C.S.A. in Civil War.
- VIRGINIA C. (JENNIE), b. 1843; d. 1862; never married.
- SAMUEL HARRINGTON WALKER, b. 1847; d. 9 Sep 1927 at Grandview, Raleigh, W. Va.; bur. Grandview Cem.; md. (1) 13 Nov 1869 in Fayette Co., W. Va., to MARGARET ANN BENNETT. Margaret, dau. of John Bennett and wife Rebecca Smith, was b. 1851 in W. Va.; d. 9 Oct 1892 at Grandview; bur. Grandview Cem. Children (Carper)--b. Raleigh Co.: Laura A. (md. M. H. Wright), Boyd Clinton (md. Letha Ann Sannar), James Emmet (md. Kate Scott), Stewart Allen (md. Wrista May Johnson), Joseph Howard, William Fredric, Rosa B., Edith M. (md. Dr. C. Lacy Callway), Franklin (md. Miss Allen), and Clyde (md. Miss Richards).
- Samuel H. W. md. (2) 15 May 1892 to MARY S. HENDERSON, b. 1862 in Raleigh Co., d. 1936 at Grandview, bur. Grandview Cem. Children (Carper)--b. Grandview: Earl, Van W., Opal (md. Homer B. Stover), and Garnet. Sam resided at Grandview and was a sawmill operator. However, he made guns in the off-season, having reportedly made a total of 54 guns and was still advertising his gunsmithing services in 1900-1 (D15).
- ISABELLA R. (BELL), b. 1849; bur. Grandview Cem.; md. 6 Dec 1866 in Raleigh Co. to ABIDIAH (or ABDEL) LAWSON McCLURE. Abidiah Lawson, son of John McClure and wife Sarah, was b. 3 Aug 1839 in Allegheny Co., Pa.; d. 24 Apr 1925 in Raleigh Co.; bur. Grandview Cem. Children (McClure)--b. Raleigh Co.: Dexter Snow (md. Mary Ann Kaylor), Sarah Jane (md. Lewis Riner), Elizabeth Leach (md. Charles S. Haney), Eugene Burk (md. Connie Belle Hunt), Wade Hampton (md. Bessie M. Shirkey), John Emmett (md. Bessie Calloway), Ada Gertrude (md. Charles L. Scott), Frederick Roy, and Robert Theodore (md. Mollie Smith).

JOSEPH W., b. 18 Aug 1853 (also given as 15 Aug 1852); d. 1936 at Uvalde, Uvalde, Texas; md. (1) 2 June 1876 in Raleigh Co. to FRANCES ELIZABETH HUNT, b. 1861 in Va., dau. of B. Lewis Hunt and wife Sallie Jenkins. Children (Carper)--b. Raleigh Co.: Catherine (md. William Ballard), Nellie (md. William Samuel Albert), Ernest (md. Ruby Smith), Jesse Lee (md. Margaret House), Emery (md. Etta Deloache), Grace (md. Elijah Powers), Lillian (md. Marion Vanburen Erb), Lois, and Robert Perry.

Joseph W. md. (2) 1901 in New Mexico to LUCY HUTCHINSON. Children (Carper): Joseph William II (md. Nettie Stockley), Harry (md. Mary Felice Benson), Herbert Jackson (md. Mary Lucille Miller), Charles Hugh (md. Jewell Spangler), and Virginia (md. Clark E. Storm). Joseph was a farmer residing at Shady Spring in Raleigh Co. in 1880 but later moved to Uvalde, Texas; to a lesser degree he was also a gunsmith (D15).

Joseph was brought as an infant by his parents to Monroe Co.; he grew up near Peterstown and upon becoming an adult was recorded in the Monroe Co. personal property taxlists beginning in 1818 (B17). Soon after marriage he moved to Cashmere, Monroe Co., where he engaged in farming, operating a tannery, and making rifles in his blacksmith shop (D18, D15). Four years after his marriage his residence was found in Giles Co., Va., where he resided 1829-1834 before moving back into Monroe Co., residing lastly on a farm on Brush Creek. He remained in Monroe Co. until moving to Raleigh Co. in 1848 or 1849, where he spent the remainder of his life (D3). (Note: the change in residence from Monroe to Giles Co. in 1828-9 may have been merely an adjustment in the county line transferring lands in the vicinity of the junction of Brush and Rich Creeks west of Peterstown to Giles Co.)

In April 1835 Joseph bought 13 a. near Peterstown from Christian Peters (B1, K:752). This tract was described as being located on both sides of Rich Creek, which was the Giles-Monroe Co. line, thus placing the tract in both counties. The tract was described as having its north point on Brush Creek near its junction with Rich Creek. From the south bank of Brush Creek the tract extended south across Rich Creek to a high ridge on the south. One survey point on the property line was described as being "where said Carper lately resided." After living temporarily in the old house, Joseph had built a new home on the south side of Brush creek further inside the property (D17).

On 7 Aug 1835 Joseph bought of John Campbell and wife Rebecca of Botetourt Co. an adjoining nine acres described as being in Giles Co. near Peterstown on the south banks of Rich Creek (B1, L:135). And then On 25 Oct 1842 he bought a lot (No. 13) in Peterstown at a sheriff's sale (B1, N:574). On 11 July 1843 Joseph Carper and wife Jane of Monroe Co., by deed recorded in Giles Co. (B18, G:365), sold the adjoining 9-acre and 13-acre tracts on Brush and Rich Creeks and Lot 13 in Peterstown to Josiah J. Cawthron of Rockingham Co., Va.

Joseph's purchasing 100 a. on the north side of Brush Creek on 20 Apr 1842 from James Meadows and wife Elizabeth, both parties resident of Monroe Co. (B1, N:336), probably contributed to the acquaintance and marriage in 1844 of Joseph's oldest daughter Hester Elizabeth to Bartley Pack. This tract was located on upper Brush Creek in the Pack community and, in fact, had previously been owned by Bartley's uncle Anderson Pack. It is presumed that Joseph and his family resided on this 100-acre farm on Brush Creek until 14 Oct 1848 when he and wife Jane sold it to John A. Spangler (B1, V:762) and moved to Raleigh Co.

After moving to Raleigh Co., Joseph Carper in conjunction with William Scott purchased on 21 Aug 1857 a 70-acre tract and an adjoining 50-acre entry located on the north side of Greenbrier River in Monroe Co. from William

Adair, trustee for Jacob Carper (B1, T:345). The 70-acre tract (now given as 78 acres) was sold on 10 Apr 1861 to John Sims by William Scott and wife Sarah of Monroe Co. and Joseph Carper and wife Jane of Raleigh Co. (B1, T:738). It is also noted that they had jointly purchased on 20 Aug 1857 personal property valued at \$156.48 from Jacob Carper, presumably Joseph's brother Jacob (B1, T:99). The business association of Joseph Carper and William Scott was apparently directed to helping Joseph's brother Jacob through financial reverses.

When first moving to Raleigh Co., Joseph settled his family on Paint Creek northwest of Beckley where his wife's younger brother Daniel Shumate and family had located. Here Joseph purchased three tracts of land totaling 1412 1/2 a. as follows: (1) 75 a. on waters of South Sand Branch on 17 June 1851, (2) 1186 1/4 a. on Paint Creek and Laurel Branch on 25 June 1855, and (3) 151 1/4 a. on Wayne's Fork of Paint Creek on 20 July 1855 (B22, A:96, 355, 380). All of the Paint Creek lands were sold by Joseph Carper and wife Jane to Lucinda Swinney, widow of Archibald Swinney, and the heirs of said Swinney on 21 Dec 1855 (B22, A:393-4). Joseph and Jane with some of their children lived on Paint Creek until 1855. While living on Paint Creek Joseph was one of 12 magistrates who incorporated Raleigh Co. in 1850, and he served on the first county court.

On 23 July 1855 Joseph purchased a tract of 666 a. lying between Piney River and Mill Creek and running down to New River, from Henry Kalar (Kaylor) and Rachel (B22, A:354). On this tract lying in northeastern Raleigh Co. Joseph founded the town of Grandview and, less several parcels conveyed away, he and Jane lived the remainder of their lives (D13, D15). Some additional lands in this vicinity were also obtained by Joseph from unknown sources. After moving to what later became Grandview, Joseph operated a tannery and was an accomplished leather smith as well as farmer and gun maker.

Joseph and Jane conveyed the following tracts in the Grandview vicinity to their children and others: (1) 136 1/2 and 75 a. to Andrew J. Carper on 7 Feb 1859 (B22, B:70), (2) 150 a. on the left hand fork of Joseph Carper's Branch to James A. Cowgill on 3 Apr 1861 (B22, B:181, C:2); (3) 158 a. on Joseph Carper's Branch and Stewart's old line to William D. Harper on 3 Apr 1861 (B22, B:182); (4) 150 a. on School House Branch adjoining A. J. Carper and Bartley Pack to George W. Carper on 9 May 1874 (B22, C:425); (5) 23 a. on waters of Piney River to A. L. McClure on 21 Apr 1875 (B22, D:116); (6) 140 a. on waters of Piney River on 12 Jan 1875 to Samuel H. W. Carper (B22, D:118); and (7) 150 a. on Laurel and School House Branches to Elizabeth and Richard Davis on 25 Apr 1875 (B22, I:94). In addition to these seven conveyances, the home place including the 43-acre Cook place (i.e. once sold to Andrew L. Cook but later returned to Joseph) was devised by Joseph in his will dated 7 July 1876 to his son Joseph (B19, 1:49).

Joseph Carper in partnership with Jacob Harper, Daniel Shumate, and John T. Sarrett purchased on 25 June 1860 a large block of land on the Marsh Fork of Coal River in northwestern Raleigh County from Wilson Abbott (B22, B:101). The Marsh Fork lands, apparently bought solely for speculation since Joseph never lived there, included tracts of 1364 1/4 a., 863 a., and 300 a. Between 4 Sep 1866 and 9 Aug 1877 Joseph sold his interests in the Marsh Fork lands to various parties (B22, B:248, 547, N:458).

Joseph was widely known for his famous Carper Rifle. In fact, when recorded in the 1870 census residing at Shady Springs, Raleigh Co., he was listed as a gunsmith (A6). Joseph's sons Andrew Jackson, Joseph, Jr., and Samuel H. W. also became gunsmiths. Joseph devised by his will in 1876 his blacksmith and gunsmith tools to his son Samuel H. W. Carper (B19, 1:49); it was this son that principally carried on the gunsmith business after Joseph's death (D15).

In his gunsmithing Joseph made many of his own tools. The gun barrels were mostly bought up in Pennsylvania although he made a few himself; most of the other metal parts in the guns were hand made by himself. He fashioned his gunstocks from chestnut wood or sometimes from curly maple, and each gunstock had a face rest. Particularly noted was Joseph's skill in making and affixing gunsights for shooting accuracy. His rifles originally sold mostly around \$25 each, but Carper rifles in existence today are now collectors' items (D18).

The following was written about Joseph Carper, gunsmith, by Margaret B. Ballard in an article contributed to the Monroe Watchman (1/7/1956 issue): "Though both [i.e. Joseph and his son Samuel] were skilled craftsmen, the father and son used different styles in their work. Joseph made all his weapons with full stocks, while the son except on special orders used half-stocks. The guns were considered excellent and their accuracy was so exact that usually they were barred from pioneer shooting matches. The gun sights were unbeatable. The old timers report that few factory-made weapons today can compare with them."

Joseph's death resulted from a stroke experienced while working in his workshop. His three-year old grand daughter Kate Carper, dau. of Joseph W., had gone to her grandfather's workshop after some scissors; but she returned to the house, saying "Grandfather won't speak to me." Upon investigation it was found that Joseph was paralyzed and could not talk; he died nine days later on 2/9/1880 (D17).

Will of Joseph Carper

In the name of God, Amen, I, Joseph Carper, Sr., of the County of Raleigh and State of West Virginia, being of sound mind and memory (blessed be Almighty God for the same), do make and publish this my last will and testament, and as to my worldly estate and all the property real, personal or mixed of which I shall die seized and possessed, or to which I shall be entitled at the time of my decease, I devise, bequeath, and dispose thereof in the manner following, to wit:

First, my will is that all my just debts and personal expenses shall by my executor hereafter named be paid out of my estate as soon after my decease as shall by him be found convenient.

Item: I give and bequeath to my son Samuel H. W. Carper my blacksmith tools and my gunsmith tools.

Item: I give, devise, and bequeath to my son Joseph Carper my farm known as the home place and the Cook place (which was and is a part of the home place), also all of the personal property of which I shall die possessed, except what is above bequeathed to my son Samuel, and the said Joseph Carper is to take care and provide for my beloved wife during her life, and to have her decently interred at her death if she should outlive me.

Item: I have given to my other sons and to my daughters all that they are to have out of estate.

And lastly, I do nominate and appoint my said son Joseph Carper to be the executor of this my last will and testament. In witness whereof I the said Joseph Carper hereunto set my name and seal and publish and declare this to be my last will and testament in presence of the witnesses named below, the 7th day of July 1876.

Joseph Carper (seal)

Signed, sealed, declared, and published by the said Joseph Carper as and for his last will and testament, in presence of us, who at his request and in his

presence, and in presence of each other, have subscribed our names as witnesses thereto,

John W. McCreesy
E. D. George
Ed O. Prince

State of West Virginia, Raleigh County, to wit:

I, John Beckley, Clerk of the County Court in and for said county and state, do hereby certify that John W. McCreesy and E. D. George, two of the subscribing witnesses to the foregoing will of Joseph Carper, Sr., this day each personally appeared before me in my office as clerk as aforesaid and made oath that they were present and witnessed the signature of Joseph Carper, Sr., to the above will, that he Carper acknowledged the same as his own last will and testament, and that they witnessed said will with their own hands and signatures at the same time in the presence of the testator and in the presence of each other, given under my hand as Clerk of the said Court this 1st day of March 1880.

John Beckley, Clerk Co. Ct.

West Virginia, Raleigh County Court Clerk's Office, March 4, 1880.
(Recorded in Will Book 1, page 49-50.)

(A6, A9, A10, A11, B1, B18, B19, B20, B22, C3, C7, C8, C9, C10, C11, C12, D1, D3, D13, D14, D15, D16, D17, D18)

FAMILY 116-117

ISAAC CARPER (1775) and SUSANNAH SOVAIN (1774)

ISAAC CARPER, son of Jacob Carper (1753) and wife Mary Peck (1755), was b. 1775 in Maryland; d. 31 Aug 1838 prob. in Botetourt Co., Va.; bur. Methodist Cem., Fincastle, Botetourt, Va.; md. 20 May 1797 in Botetourt Co. to SUSANNAH SOVAIN. Susannah, dau. of Abraham Sovain (1741) and wife Lydia (1745), was b. 1774 at Winchester, Frederick Co., Va.; d. 13 Aug 1844 in Botetourt Co.; bur. Methodist Cem., Fincastle. Children (Carper):

LYDIA, b. 31 Mar 1798 in Botetourt Co.; d. 6 Aug 1876 in Summers Co., W. Va.; md. (bond) 21 Nov 1816 in Monroe Co. to URIAH GARTEN. Uriah, son of Griffith Garten and wife Hannah Miller, was b. 18 Apr 1787 in Monroe Co.; d. 18 Oct 1866; bur. Greenville Cem., Monroe Co. Children Garten--prob. all b. in present-day Summers Co.: Agnes P., Nancy, Mary S. (md. Stephen Davis or Davidson), Elizabeth M. (md. Jackson P. Saunders), Lydia D. (md. Phillip V. Vass), Caleb J. (md. Matilda M. Rollyson), Griffith D. (md. Emily D. Gabbert), and Elijah A. (md. Sarah Jane Evans. Uriah was conveyed by his father a farm of 146 a. on Bradshaw's Run of Indian Creek in Summers on which he and his family resided.

JACOB, b. 13 Nov 1799 in Botetourt Co.; d. 8 Sep 1863; bur. Mt. Pisgah Church Cem., Talcott, Summers, W. Va.; md. 6 May 1819 in Monroe Co. to RACHEL PINKNEY, b. 1802 in Virginia, bur. Grandview, Cem., Raleigh Co., W. Va., dau. of James Pinkney. No children. Jacob was a shoe and boot maker and resided in Monroe Co.; after his death his widow moved to Shady Springs, Raleigh Co., and resided with the Joseph Carper family.

*JOSEPH, b. 27 Dec 1802 near Fincastle in Botetourt Co.; d. 9 Feb 1880 in Raleigh Co., W. Va.; bur. Grandview Cem., Raleigh Co.; md. 16 Sep 1824 in Monroe Co. to JANE SHUMATE. (Refer to Family 58-59 for additional details.)

- MARY (POLLY), b. 27 Apr 1804 in Montgomery Co.; md. 14 Aug 1824 in Monroe Co., W. Va., to ELIJAH A. GARTEN, b. 1798 in Monroe Co., son of Griffith Garten and wife Hannah Miller. Children (Garten)-
-b. W. Va.: Susan J. (md. John Beckett), Manda B. (md. William Manns), Isaac G. (md. Elizabeth Toney), Jesse W., Patterson H., Panpilla (probably Parsilla), Mary Magdalene (md. Simon Bolivar McDonald), Elijah D., and Lewis C. Elijah owned 135 a. on Indian Creek in then Monroe Co., which he sold in 1847; he was recorded as a blacksmith living in Logan Co., W. Va., in 1850, but soon moved to Kentucky.
- HESTER, b. 12 Nov 1806 in Monroe Co.; d. before 1810.
- LINNEY, b. 12 Feb 1809 in Monroe Co.; d. 1809.
- WILLIAM MENDENHALL, b. 25 Aug 1810 in Monroe Co.; d. 2 Dec 1866; md. 10 Oct 1832 in Botetourt Co. to JANE SNYDER, b. 1811, d. 1874, dau. of Peter Snyder. Children (Carper): Mary S. (md. John Fagan), Jacob L., Martha A., Jehu H., George W., John W., James M., and Charles E. This family resided in Botetourt Co. in 1850.
- NANCY A., b. 13 May 1813 in Monroe Co.; md. 24 Aug 1831 in Monroe Co. to JOHN S. BRUGH.
- ISAAC, JR., b. 1 May 1815 in Monroe Co.; d. 4 Aug 1887; md. (1) 30 Oct 1833 to CHARLOTTE SNYDER, dau. of Peter Snyder, by whom he had one child; md. (2) 7 July 1838 in Botetourt Co. to ELIZABETH HANEY, by whom he had eight children.
- JOHN, b. 30 Sep 1819 in Monroe Co.; md. (bond) 21 Oct 1841 to MARY C. FRANCIS.
- PATTERSON HANNA, b. 22 Oct 1821 in Monroe Co.; d. 1888-9; md. 9 Feb 1847 in Monroe Co. to LETHA ANN WOOD, b. 1830 in W. Va., dau. of John H. Wood and wife Sarah Jordan. Children (Carper)--all b. in W. Va.: Sarah frances (md. Uriah A. Garten, John Henry, Mary S., Minerva A., Jacob Lewis, Nancy E., Lydia M., James A., and Henrietta. This family were residing in Mercer Co. in 1860, in Red Sulphur District in 1870, and in Pipestem twp., Summers Co, in 1880.

Isaac Carper was paid on 5 May 1797 for guarding prisoners being held by the District Court at Sweet Springs (B5). One anecdote that has surfaced is that he used this money in marrying Susannah Sovain 15 days later. The places of residence for Isaac Carper and his family as summarized from county personal property taxlists are as follows: 1798-1800 in Botetourt Co. (B12), in 1801-1802 in Montgomery Co. (B13), 1804-1828 in Monroe Co. (B17), 1829 in Giles Co. (B20), and 1830-1831 in Monroe Co. (B17). Isaac and his family were censused in Monroe Co. in 1810 (A3) and in Peterstown, Monroe Co., in 1830 (A4).

Isaac's residence in Peterstown, W. Va., covered a period of at least 25 years. Here in the southwestern corner of Monroe Co. most of his children were born, and most were married. His home in Peterstown has been described as having being located in the center of town (D13). On 19 Apr 1815 Isaac bought of Christian Peters Lot 30 in Peterstown, located on the west side of Waters St. and on both sides of Race Creek (B1, D:486). In 1816 and 1817 he paid taxes not only on Lot 30 but also on Lot 13 in Peterstown as assignee of Christian Peters (B16). When Isaac and wife Susannah sold Lot 30 to John Spangler on 30 Oct 1819, Solomon Broyles was then living on it (B1, H:102).

Since land ownership for Isaac in Monroe Co., based on a search of the deeds, was limited to Lot 30 and this only from 1815 to 1819, it appears that Isaac had mostly rented a home for his family. It is also apparent that Isaac never accumulated much property and depended upon manual skills as a livelihood, but his exact occupation is unknown. It is speculated he might have been a gunsmith as was his son Joseph, but this is not verified. On 6/18/1811 Isaac had been appointed a constable in Monroe Co. (B21).

On a bill of sale dated 14 Feb 1833 in Giles Co., Jacob Carper sold personal property to Isaac Carper for \$50, John McClaugherty and Joseph Carper witnessing (D17). These three Carpers may have been brothers; however, since Isaac Jr. (1815) would have been only 18 years of age at the time, the purchaser Isaac Carper was more apt to have been the father Isaac Carper (1775).

It seems probable that Isaac and Susannah, after residing in Monroe Co. for many years, finally returned to Botetourt Co. and died there (D11). It is reported that Isaac and Susannah are buried in the Methodist Cem., Fincastle, beside their son Mendenhall Carper (D17, in a statement given O. H. Carper by Mrs. Florence Carper Mullen in 1945). The places of death of Isaac and wife Susannah remain unproven by original documents, and no estate records have been found for them.

The death dates of Isaac and Susannah and the names and birth dates for their 11 children are recorded in the family Bible (D16). (Note: in a letter dated 8 July 1838 O. H. Carper stated that when he first saw the family Bible the names and birth dates of only the oldest eight children were included and that those for the youngest three were later added from other family sources.) It is noted that the dates used by Peck (D11) vary slightly from those found in the family Bible; also Peck did not include John N. Carper as a son of Isaac and Susannah. The Bible listings of the family are followed in this work.

(A3, A4, A5, A6, A7, A8, B1, B16, B17, B18, B19, B20, B21, C2, C3, C6, D3, D8, D9, D11, D13, D14, D16, D17)

FAMILY 232-233

JACOB CARPER (1753) and MARY PECK (1755)

JACOB CARPER, son of Jacob Carper (1730), was b. abt 1753 probably near Sharpsburg, Washington, Md.; probably d. 1826 in Jefferson Co., Tenn. [also given as about 30 Mar 1829 in Va. (D19) but seems doubtful]; md. 1773-4 probably near Sharpsburg to MARY PECK. Mary, dau. of Johan Jacob Peck (1723) and wife Lydia Borden (1721), was b. 1755 probably in Monmouth Co., N. Jer.; d. prior 11 Sep 1826 in Jefferson Co., Tenn. Children (Carper)--probably first two b. in Maryland, remainder near Fincastle, Botetourt, Va.:

*ISAAC CARPER, b. 1775; d. 31 Aug 1839; md. 20 May 1797 in Botetourt Co. to SUSANNAH SOVAIN. (Refer to Family 116-116 for additional details.)

HESTER VANMETER, b. 1777; d. 8 Apr 1883; md. 5 Jan 1795 in Botetourt Co. to WILLISTON TALBOT, b. 1775 prob. in Bedford Co., son of James Talbot and wife Mary Smith. Children (Talbot)--older children b. in Botetourt Co., younger children in Jefferson Co., Tenn.: Elizabeth Smith (md. (1) Nathaniel Cox, (2) George Hunt Chaffin), Mary Carper (md. Thomas Jarnigan Lea), James, Jacob Carper (md. Ann Johnston), Williston, Priscilla S. H. (md. Cyrus M. Goodlin), Isham, Hester Ann (md. James Gillespie), George, Letitia (md. Samuel A. Houston), and Sarah Sophia (md. Silas Morton Moorman). The Talbot family moved from Botetourt Co. to Jefferson Co., Tenn.

ELIZABETH, b. abt 1780; d. after 1850; md. 20 June 1803 at Strawberry Plains, Jefferson, Tenn., to WILLIAM MENDENHALL. William, son of Mordecai Mendenhall and wife Hannah Marshall, was b. 10 Dec 1779 in North Carolina; d. 3 Aug 1840 in Shelby Co., Ohio. Children (Mendenhall)--probably all b. in Clinton and Miami Co., Ohio: Isaac (md. Elizabeth Stafford), Mordecai (md. Ruth Edwards), Jacob, Hattie, Williston T. (md. Mary Ann Barkalow), William M. (md. Minerva Hay), Sarah (md. Snowden Barnes), Hester, Joseph,

- Mary Elizabeth (md. (1) Charles Williamson, (2) Lewis C. Manning), and Priscilla (md. Alexander Higgins).
- JOSEPH, b. 12 Oct 1782; d. 22 July 1832 in Bledsoe Co., Tenn.; md. about 1804 to PEGGY FOSTER, b. 9 Oct 1779 in Virginia and d. 5 Nov 1841 in Tenn. Children (Carper)--Jacob, Mary, Jenny Draper, William Foster (md. Elizabeth W. Spicer), Susannah Sawyers, and Alexander Sayers (or Sawyers) (md. Elizabeth Towry). (Note: both Jacob Carper (1753) and his brother Nicholas had sons Joseph born in the mid 1780's, and their respective sons Joseph have not been fully proven. However, based on Joseph of Nicholas reportedly still living in 1841 (D11) and Joseph of Bledsoe Co. naming his eldest two children Jacob and Mary (D7, citing Jean Carper of Orangeville, Cal.), it is concluded that Joseph (1782-1832) must have been the son Joseph of Jacob and Mary.)
- MARY, b. 1785; md. 27 Apr 1805 in Jefferson Co. to REED COX, son of William Cox.
- MARGARET, b. 12 Nov 1789; d. 4 June 1874; md. 26 June 1808 in Jefferson Co. to JACOB BRAZELTON. Jacob, son of William Brazleton and wife Elizabeth Lucas, was b. 23 Dec 1787; d. 18 Apr 1871. Children (Brazleton)--oldest children b. in Jefferson Co., Tenn., younger children in Illinois: Elizabeth (md. Richard Wilson), Mary (md. Matthew Brown), Reed (md. Nancy Lemly), Clabourn (md. (1) Anna Thornton, (2) Anna Critch Charman), William (md. (1) Phoebe Brazleton, (2) Hulda Bales, (3) Rebecca Fetrow Mercer), Isaac (md. Jane Lemly), Edith (md. Jackson Howard), Hester (md. George Lemly), Achilles (md. (1) Harriet Chapin, (2) Sarah Chapin, (3) Mrs. Comer), and Jane (md. James Whittaker). The Brazleton family were residing in Edgar Co., Ill., in 1825 but had moved on to Vermillion Co., Ill., by 1827 and to Milwaukee Co., Wisc., by 1837.
- SARAH (SALLY), b. 1792; md. 22 Jan 1814 in Jefferson Co. to JOHN W. HOUSLEY.
- JACOB, JR., b. 1795; d. 3 Aug 1869; md. (1) 13 Apr 1815 in Botetourt Co. to MARY NEVILLE, b. 1797 in Virginia, d. 22 Apr 1853, dau. of John Neville and wife Mary. Children (Carper)--probably all b. Botetourt Co., Va.: John Neville (md. Mary Catherine Francis), Alzira J. (md. Benjamin Carper Hedrick), William Barnes (md. Rebecca Elizabeth Allen), Enoch Sullivan (md. Elizabeth Frances Evans), Emaline S. (md. (1) John H. Oliver, (2) Fletcher C. Scott), Martha Elizabeth (md. Thomas McFerran Carper), Mary J., and Eldredge Veach Hersey (md. Cordelia Whiteside). Jacob, Jr., md. (2) 21 Dec 1854 to RACHEL BILBO FERRILL, dau. of Abner H. Ferrill and wife Sarah Bilbo. Jacob was a Methodist minister, living for a short time in Tennessee but then returning to Fincastle, Va.
- WINIFRED, b. 1797; d. after 6 Feb 1882; md. (1) 23 Dec 1819 in Jefferson Co. to JACOB or JOB GARETTSON; md. (2) LORENZO D. ALEXANDER of Sevier Co., Tenn.

Jacob Carper and family moved from the vicinity of Sharpsburg, Washington, Md., and Shepherdstown, Berkeley, Va. (now W. Va.) to Botetourt Co., Va., in 1778, accompanied by the families of his siblings Nicholas Carper and Margaret Carper Peck, wife of Benjamin Peck. He is first mentioned in the Botetourt Co. records on 12 Nov 1779, when serving as a juror. When the land taxlists were begun in Botetourt Co. in 1782, Jacob was taxed on 300 acres and half of two lots in the town of Fincastle. From 1782 through 1802 Jacob continued to be taxed on lands and slaves in Botetourt Co. (B12).

Jacob's first land purchase in Botetourt Co. was on 17 Aug 1781 when he bought of William Christian a tract of 600 a. on the waters of Catawba Creek (B7, 2:541); 300 a. off of this tract was sold on 8 May 1783 by Jacob and Mary to Isaac Van Meter (B7, 3:1). From 1781 to shortly after 1800 when he moved

to Jefferson Co., Tenn., Jacob was involved in numerous land transactions in original Botetourt Co. These lands were variously located on Catawba Creek, Craig Creek, heads of Roanoke River and Catawba Creek, and Bordens Run, along with lots in the town of Fincastle.

"While living in Botetourt County he held a license to 'keep an ordinary at his house,' was an overseer of the road, and was granted 'leave to build a grist mill on his own land'. He was also a merchant, making trips to Baltimore to purchase goods, an activity he continued after removing to [Jefferson Co.] Tennessee. He served as a Revolutionary soldier" (D11). (Jacob is credited by DAR only with public service relative to the Revolutionary War (D19).) His building a new mill on Catawba Creek in 1786 required an adjustment in the public road (B6). In 1789 he served as a juror for the District Court at Sweet Springs (B5). As a tavern owner and operator Jacob was often in court answering charges such as "retailing cider for 6 to 7 pence per half quart," for "not having copy of rates posted in house," for "permitting gaming in his house," and "selling liquor illegally" (B6).

No record has been found of Jacob Carper owning land in Jefferson Co., Tenn., to which place he and his family moved in 1801 or 1802. However, he was recorded as witnessing deeds between 1802 and 1813 (B14, F:113, 151, K:212, 221). On 16 Mar 1816 a negro girl named Suck or Sucky, the property of Jacob Carper, was sold for debt to Reed Cox, the highest bidder (B14, N:231). Since Reed Cox was his son-in-law, Cox's purchase was probably in behalf of Jacob.

It is evident that Jacob had business connections in Tennessee before moving to that state. When the town of Knoxville was laid out in 1791, a drawing of lots was held on 3 Oct 1791, at which Jacob Carper drew four lots; Adam Peck drew one lot (D12, 13:10, 1941; as cited in D11). No proof of his death date and place nor an estate record has been found for Jacob Carper. However, relative to an inventory made of the estate of his Mary Carper [his wife], the administrator Williston Talbot on 11 Sep 1826 reported "nothing has come into his hands since his appointment" (B15, 2:538).

(A2, B5, B6, B7, B12, B14, B15, C2, C5, D7, D9, D10, D11, D12, D19)

FAMILY 234-235

ABRAHAM SOVAIN (1741) and LYDIA (1745)

ABRAHAM SOVAIN was b. abt 1741 reportedly in Alsace-Lorraine or France; d. 1805 probably at Fincastle, Botetourt, Va. (also given at Sweet Spring, Monroe, W. Va.); md. LYDIA, b. abt 1745 and d. 1828 in Montgomery Co., Va. Children (Sovain)--first eight children probably all b. at Winchester, Frederick, Va.:

MARY (POLLY), b. abt 1766; md. 19 June 1787 at Winchester to THOMAS WADE.

REBECCA (possible daughter), b. abt 1768; md. 1787 in Frederick Co. to SAMUEL CLARK.

CATHERINE (KATE), b. abt 1772; md. (bond) 28 Feb 1793 in Botetourt Co., Va., to PHILLIP SPICKARD.

*SUSANNAH, b. 1774 in Frederick Co., Va.; d. 13 Aug 1844; md. 20 May 1797 at Sweet Springs, then in Greenbrier Co., Va., to ISAAC CARPER. (Refer to Family 116-117 for further details.)

ELIZABETH (BETSY), b. abt 1776; md. 1797 in Frederick Co. to HENRY SMITH.

HENRY, b. 1783; d. 1859 in Lawrence Co., Ky.; md. 8 Oct 1805 in Monroe Co., W. Va., to MILLY BROWN. Children (Sovain): Mary Jane (md. Mitchell Stewart) and Millie. On 29 Apr 1806 Henry purchased two

tracts of 172 and 70 a. on Turkey Creek a branch of Indian Creek in Monroe Co. from William Ruth and wife Jane (B8, #29). On 15 May 1810 he and wife Milly sold these same tracts to Andrew Allen (B1, 2:205). About 1821 Henry and family moved to the Big Sandy Valley, settling first in Wayne Co., Va., and then in Lawrence Co., Ky. (D4). He may have returned to Virginia for a time; on 1 Mar 1829 one Henry Sovine purchased of George Odenwalt and wife Elizabeth a tract of 150 a. on the North Fork of Roanoke River in Montgomery Co.; this tract was sold by Henry Sovine and wife Catherine of Montgomery Co. to William Halpain on 19 Oct 1839 (B9, K:271, L:489).

ABRAHAM, JR., b. 4 Oct 1785 at Winchester; bur. 17 June 1786 at Winchester.
 NANCY, b. abt 1787; md. 1812 to SAMUEL BURK, son of James Burk, Jr., and wife Mary.
 LYDIA, b. Nov 1794 in Botetourt Co.; d. 10 May 1869 (age 74y 6m) in Mercer Co., W. Va.; md. (bond) 2 May 1809 in Montgomery Co., Va., to JAMES KEATLEY. (Note: at the time of her marriage in 1809, Harman Sifford was Lydia's guardian (C4). James, son of Francis Keatley, was b. abt 1790; d. in Monroe Co. Children (Keatley)-- all probably b. in Monroe Co.: John (md. (1) Mahala McDaniel, (2) Susan Harvey), Harriet (md. Caperton Wright), Nancy (md. John Holman Saunders), Joseph (md. (1) Delilah Hutchinson, (2) Eliza Francis), Wilson (md. Martha Roles), Emily (md. Alexander Halstead), Henry (md. (1) Almira Hurt, (2) Jane Lively), James (md. Caroline Garten), Mary Ann (md. Green V. Pine), and Adaline B. (md. Henry Gore). James was a farmer; his place was located in Monroe Co. at the top of Tower Hill above the mouth of Indian Creek (D5).

Emigrating on the Ship Crawford with Charles Smith, master, on 30 Dec 1768 was Abraham Sauvain; the ship landed at Philadelphia after sailing from Rotterdam but stopping en route for refueling at Cowes, Eng. (D6, 1:723). By 2 Sep 1777 Abraham was residing in Frederick Co., Va., when he bought two adjoining city lots in the town of Winchester from Joseph Jones and wife Eleanor for \$30 (B10, 17:349). Apparently after making substantial improvements on the lots, probably including the construction of a house, Abraham Sovain and wife Lidie on 8 Mar 1780 sold this property for L800 to Elias Holding, jailer (B10, 19:1).

Shortly afterwards on 2 May 1780 Abraham Sovain of Winchester bought Lot #203 in Winchester from William Baylis for L1300 (B10, 19:37). However, Abraham Sovain (signing his name) and wife Lydia (making her mark) gave a trust deed on this property to Christian Stover of Strasburg, Shenandoah, Va., to secure a debt of L160 owed to Stover (B10, 19:388). This was followed on 8 Apr 1784 with a mortgage on the property to Stover (B10, 20:148). In the case in chancery of Christian Stover vs. Abraham Sovain, the Frederick Co. Court ruled on 10 Aug 1787 that Abraham pay Stover before 10 Aug 1788 a total of L260 or the sheriff was to sell the property (B11, 20:523). As a result of his indebtedness, Abraham lost the property, and it was sold and conveyed by Christian Stover and wife Barbara to John Conrad Deboe on 1 Mar 1790 (B10, 22:472).

When recorded in the personal property taxlists of Frederick Co. in 1782 Abraham's household included seven whites and one black; in 1787 he was recorded in Winchester, Frederick Co., owning personal property of one cattle but no horses (B4). It appears Abraham then returned to Europe for some unknown reason, because on 7 July 1788 "Abraham Sauvain de Vinzestre (Winchester) en Virginie" landed the second time at Philadelphia (D6, 2:31). The return trip had been made from an unstated departure place on the Le Brie, a barque from London, Capt. William Jung, master. Arriving on the same ship

were Jean Pierre Sauvain, sa femme (his wife) Catherine, and David Sauvain, undoubtedly close relatives but about whom nothing further is known.

Abraham Sovain had removed to Botetourt Co., Va., by 1790, when he was recorded for the first time there on the personal property taxlists (B12), on which list he continued through 1796. Although Abraham has not been found after 1796 in the personal property taxlists of Botetourt or adjoining counties, he apparently continued to reside in the vicinity until his death in 1805. Since he owned lots both in Fincastle, Botetourt Co., and in Blacksburg, Montgomery Co., he may have lived temporarily in one of those places. However, when he made his will in 1803 he gave his residence as Monroe Co., W. Va., probably at Sweet Springs where he was employed, at least part time.

Prior to 21 Oct 1790 Abraham became the jailor for the District Court (6th) for the Counties of Botetourt, Greenbrier, Kanawha, and Montgomery Counties (B5), a position he retained for many years and probably until his death (B5). Initially the court met in the respective county courthouses, but beginning on 18 Oct 1796 a permanent seat was established at Sweet Springs located in the southeast corner of present-day Monroe Co., W. Va. He appeared on the daily payroll schedules of the court both as Abraham Sovain and Abraham Sovine.

A factual anecdote relating to the district court was that on 18 Apr 1790 Abraham Sovain was bound over by the Botetourt County Court for appearance at the next court to answer Francis Smith on a charge of trespass assault and battery with damages claimed of L500 (B6). On 21 Aug 1790 the case appeared in the district court (B5). However, on 12 May 1791 the suit was dismissed by the plaintiff (B6), the final disposition and settlement in the case not shown.

In his will dated 10 Dec 1803 and probated 18 May 1805, appropriately enough, in the district court at Sweet Springs (B2, p. 1), Abraham Sovain left two houses and lots in Blacksburg, Va., and one house and lot in Fincastle to his wife Lydia. Abraham recorded the names of the following children in his will: Nancy Sovain, Lydia Sovain, Henry Sovain, Polly Wade, Kitty Spickard, Betsy Smith, and Susanna Carper. His wife Lydia was appointed executrix; and William Herbert, Robert Douthat, and William Wiley Douthat witnessed the will. At the May 1805 district court at Sweet Springs, Lydia posted an executor bond in the amount of \$1000 (B2, #29). The personal estate of Abraham Sovain was appraised by Ro. Douthat and J. Davis at \$294. The half-acre lot #53 in Fincastle had been purchased by Abraham Sovine of Botetourt Co. from George Hancock and wife Margaret of the same place on 11 June 1799 for \$100 (B7, 6:700).

Following the death of her husband, Lydia moved to Montgomery Co., Va., where she first appeared in the personal property taxlists in 1806 (B13); she made her permanent home in Blacksburg. In her will dated 25 Oct 1821 but not probated until June 1828 (B3, 4:386), Lydia Savain of Montgomery Co. made her daughter Nancy Burk the sole heir of the real and personal property she had accumulated since the death of her husband Abraham Savain, consisting principally of two lots in Blacksburg. One lot had been purchased of George Surface, the second lot was being purchased from Henry Linkous. She stated that her reasons for making her daughter Nancy her sole heir and executrix was that Nancy had received but little out the estate of her father and had been helping her mother acquire said property.

Will of Abraham Sovain

IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN:

I, Abraham Sovain of the County of Monroe, being weak in body but of a sound mind and disposing memory (for which I thank God) and calling to mind the uncertainty of human life, and being desirous to dispose of all such worldly estate, as hath pleased God to bless me with, I give and bequeath the same in manner following, that is to say:

1st. I give and bequeath unto my beloved wife Lydia my two lots and houses in the town of Blacksburg, Montgomery [Co.], likewise my house and lot and corner cupboard in Fincastle, Botetourt [Co.], with my stove and all the household furniture I shall be possessed with at my death only what is hereafter excepted, to be hers during her life or widowhood, but at the expiration of either to be sold and equally divided among all my children.

2ndly. I give and bequeath to my wife Lydia my horse, one piyed(?) cow, 1 chest of drawers, one feather bed and furniture, 1 large trunk, 2 Dutch ovens, 2 potts, with all the money, bonds, and book accounts I may be possessed with at my death after my debts and funeral charges is paid, to her own proper use and disposal forever.

3rdly. I give and bequeath unto my daughter Nancy Sovain the choice of my beds and furniture (after my wife has taken hers) with the cow and calf she now claims to be hers forever.

4thly. I give and bequeath to my daughter Lydia Sovain 1 spotted heifer, with the next choice of my beds and furniture, to be hers forever.

5thly. As for my son Henry Sovain with my daughters that are now married, to wit, Polly Wade, Kity Spickard, Betsy Smith, and Susanna Carper, having already given them their shares yet as a parental acknowledgement of my love and affection to them I give and bequeath to each of them one dollar (exclusive of their parts which shall be coming to each of them out of my estate at the expiration of my wife's life or widowhood) to be paid by my executrix of this my last will and testament, hereby revoking all former will and testament by me heretofore made.

In witness whereof I do hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal this 10th day of December in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and three and of our foundation XXVII.

Signed, sealed, published, and declared Abraham Sovain (seal)
as and for the last will and testament
of the within named A. Sovain in the
presence of us:

William Herbert
Robt. Douthat
Wm. Wiley Douthat

At the district court holden at the Sweet Springs 18th of May 1805.

This last will and testament of Abraham Sovain, deceased, was presented in court and being proved by the oaths of William Herbert and William Wiley Douthat two of the witnesses thereto is ordered to be recorded.

Teste: Erasmus Stribling (C.S.D.C.)

(Will of Abraham Sovain recorded in the District Court, Sweet Springs, W. Va., page 1 (B2).)

Will of Lydia Savain

IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.

I, Lydia Savain of Montgomery County and State of Virginia considering the uncertainty of this mortal life and being of sound mind and disposing memory, blessed be almighty God for the same, do make and publish this my last will and testament in manner and form following, viz: First, all my just debts of which there are but few are to be punctually paid, also my funeral expenses.

Item. To my daughter Nancy Burk I give and bequeath all my estate both real and personal which I have acquired since the death of my late husband Abraham Savain consisting of two lots in the Town of Blacksburg, to wit, one which I purchased of George Surface a title to which is now of record in the county court of Montgomery and at this time only enclosed by a common fence adjoining one of the lots of William Thomas, Esq. The other lately purchased of Henry Linkous, Jr., designated in the plat of said town by number (blank) and adjoining lot no. (blank) at this time occupied by Thomas Linkous and was purchased by him of Thomas Jones. This lot is enclosed and has a stable on it.

The personal property consisting of beds, bedsteads, and the furniture thereto belonging, cupboards, tables, chairs, chests, trunks, one bureau, and all my kitchen furniture also whatever I may have on hand in my grocery with all the money, bonds, and book accounts to which I may be possessed of at the time of my death after my just debts and funeral expenses are paid as aforesaid; and in order to a clear understanding as to my intentions, my will and desire is that my daughter Nancy Burk shall have and receive immediately after my death not only what I now possess but also whatever I may hereafter accumulate and be possessed of at my death to her and her heirs forever. My reasons for making my daughter Nancy Burk my sole and inclusive heir is not from any want of affection towards my other children but from principles of justice. 1st., that she has received but little out of the estate of my late husband. 2nd., that in the acquirement of what I now possess she has considerably contributed and has been my only assistant. 3rd., my other children has been already as well provided for as circumstances would justly admit of.

And lastly, as to all the rest, residue, & remainder of my estate which may not have been particularly named & specified I give and bequeath the same to my daughter Nancy aforesaid, whom I hereby appoint sole executrix of this my last will and testament hereby revoking all former wills by me made. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal the 25th day of October in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred & twenty one.

Signed, sealed, published & declared	her
by the above named Lydia Savain to	Lydia x Savain (seal)
be her last will and testament in the	mark
presence of us who have hereunto	
subscribed our names as witnesses in	
presence of the testator:	

John B. Goodrich
George Surface [in German]

In Montgomery Court June 1828

This last will and testament of Lydia Savain, deceased, was presented in court and proved by the oaths of John B. Goodrich and George Surface, the witnesses thereunto subscribed, and ordered to be recorded; and on the motion of Nancy Burk alias Ann Burk the executrix therein named who made oath and together with John Chapman her security entered into and acknowledged a bond in the penalty of five hundred dollars conditioned as the law directs, a certificate is granted her for obtaining a probate of the said will in due form.

Teste: Charles Taylor, clk.

(Will of Nancy Savain recorded in Montgomery Co., Va., Wills, 4:386 (B3)).

(A1, B1, B2, B3, B4, B5, B6, B7, B8, B9, B10, B11, B12, B13, C1, C2, C3, C4, D1, D2, D3, D4, D5, D6).

FAMILY 464-465

JACOB CARPER (1730) and wife unknown.

JACOB CARPER, probable son of Nicholas Carper (1710) and wife Margaretha, was b. about 1730 probably in Germany; resided lastly at or near Sharpsburg, Washington, Md.; md. but name of wife unknown. Children (Carper)-
-b. western Maryland, probably in Washington Co.:

NICHOLAS, b. abt 1749; d. 1813 at Fincastle, Botetourt, Va.; bur. Fincastle Presby. Cem., Fincastle; md. ELIZABETH HARVEY, b. abt 1753, d. abt 1835 at Fincastle, dau. of John Harvey and Mary Jones. Children (Carper)--probably first four b. in Maryland, remainder at Fincastle: Elizabeth (md. James Harvey), Jacob (md. Sarah Raymer), Henry (md. Nancy Greer), Benjamin (md. Elizabeth Van Meter), Mary (Polly) (md. Thomas McFerran), Joseph (prob. md. Mary), Sarah (Sally) (md. Hugh Holston), and Isaac (md. Elizabeth Nutter). (Note: Joseph of Nicholas has been concluded to be Joseph (1787-1859, md. Mary, resided in Tenn. in 1814 but returned to live in Craig Co., Va.)

Nicholas is first mentioned in Botetourt Co. on 14 May 1779 when serving as a jurymen (D9). On 10 Aug 1779 he purchased from Israel Christian tracts of 150 and 178 acres on Looney Creek (B7, 2:449). He later also purchased several other tracts on Looney Creek and waters of Catawba Creek, plus lots in Fincastle, bringing his land ownership to a peak of about 1335 acres. He operated a grist mill on Looney Creek, owned a few slaves, and paid land taxes in Botetourt County beginning in 1783 until the time of his death.

Nicholas is listed as a Revolutionary War soldier (D21, p. 317). He contributed civil service during the Revolutionary War including guarding the jail at Fincastle and furnishing salt to guards on military service, after which he was recruited as a militiaman under Captain Robinson in 1782 to serve for three years or until the end of the war (D7). He represented Botetourt Co. in the Virginia House of Delegates in 1802/3; he also was a charter member and later elder of the Sinking Springs Presbyterian church in Fincastle (D9). In his will dated 12 Feb 1811 and probated in Botetourt Co. in May 1813 (B28, B:333), Nicholas Carper left legacies to his wife Elizabeth and his eight children, whom he named, and appointed his sons Jacob and Benjamin as executors..
MARGARET, b. 27 Dec 1751; d. 1 June 1824 in Craig Co., Va.; bur. Miller Cem., Craig Co.; md. 1769 near Sharpsburg, Washington, Md., to BENJAMIN PECK, son of Johan Jacob Peck and wife Lydia Borden. (Refer to Family 466-467 for a continuation of this couple and their family.)

*JACOB, b. abt 1753; d. about 1826 in Jefferson Co., Tenn.; md. 1773-4 to MARY PECK. (Refer to Family 232-233 for additional details.) Possibly other children.

It is presumed that Jacob Carper "married a German girl, probably another immigrant like himself and his father. A grandson, Joseph Peck, son

of Benjamin and Margaret (Carper) Peck, wrote of his visits to the home of his grand parents during the late 1700's. He stated that they spoke only German..... Jacob was supposedly the oldest son of Nicholas Carper.... Jacob Carper, son of the immigrant Nicholas, lived in Maryland and was the father of at least three children.... All three families moved from Maryland to Botetourt County, Va." [in 1778] (D7 after D9). It is presumed that Jacob Carper (1730) and his wife (name unknown) remained and died in the vicinity of Sharpsburg, Washington, Md.

(B7, B12, D7, D8, D9, D10, D11, D21)

FAMILY 466-467

JOHANN JACOB PECK (1723) and LYDIA BORDEN (1721)

JOHANN JACOB (Jr.), son of Johann Jacob Peck (Sr.) (1678) and wife Anna Marie Hummel (1686), was b. 7 July 1723 at Ebingen, Scharvarzne, Wuertt. (Germany); d. summer 1801 near Fincastle, Botetourt, Va.; bur. Fincastle; md. 1743 reportedly at Staunton, Augusta, Va., to LYDIA BORDEN. Lydia, dau. of Benjamin Borden (1675) and wife Zeruriah Winter (1679), was b. 1721 in Monmouth Co., N. Jer.; d. between Sep 1799 and 8 Oct 1800 at Fincastle; bur. Fincastle. Children (Peck)--first two b. in Frederick (now Clark) Co., Va., remainder near Sharpsburg, Washington, Md.:

BENJAMIN, b. 1744; d. 1 June 1824 at Sinking Creek, Craig, Va.; bur. Miller Cem., Craig Co.; md. 1769 near Sharpsburg to MARGARET CARPER. Margaret, dau. of Jacob Carper (1730), was b. 27 Dec 1751 in Washington Co., Md.; d. 1 June 1824 in Craig Co.; bur. Miller Cem. Children (Peck)--first two probably b. near Sharpsburg, Washington, Md., next three at New Mecklenburg, Berkeley, W. Va., and remainder in Botetourt (now Craig) Co., Va.: Jacob (md. Malinda Givens), John (md. Elizabeth Snidow), Elizabeth (md. Elijah DePew), Margaret (md. James DePew), Adam (md. Catharine Stebar), Mary (md. Jacob DePew), Benjamin, Jr. (md. Rebecca Snidow), Hester (md. Elisha Givans), Joseph (md. Elizabeth Chapman), and Nancy S. (md. David Johnston).

Benjamin Peck apparently resided from 1769 to 1772 near Sharpsburg and from 1772 to 1778 in New Mecklenburg (D9), after which he and his family moved to Botetourt Co. On 18 Nov 1777 Benjamin Peck and wife Margaret of Berkeley sold a lot in Mecklenburg for L156 to John Marks (B29). This tract was described as one half acre and appurtenances located on German Street and Street One Hundred. Completion of the sale was acknowledged by Benjamin and Margaret on 17 Mar 1778. When Benjamin purchased this lot on 7 June 1772 for L3 from Thomas and Elizabeth Shepherd, the conveyance stipulated that the buyer was to build one good dwelling house, at least 25 feet by 16 feet with stone or brick chimney.

In Botetourt Co. he paid taxes on five acres in 1782 (B25). On 12 Oct 1784 he purchased from Nicholas Carper a tract of 264 a. on Looney Creek (B7, 3:296). On 12 Sep 1794 he sold this tract and a second tract of land on Looney Creek granted him in 1787 to Christian Harshbarger (B7, 5:185).

About 1794 he moved his family to the headwaters of Sinking Creek then in Botetourt Co. but after 1806 in Giles Co. and finally in Craig Co., Va. On 1 Oct 1794 he purchased an 88-acre tract on Sinking Creek from Samuel Black (B7, 5:168). In 1806 he paid taxes on this 88-acre tract plus additional tracts of 340 a. and 15 a. in Giles Co. (B23), all located on Sinking Creek. His will

was made on 27 Dec 1820 and probated in Giles Co., Va., in May 1827 (B30, A:436). Benjamin is credited with civil service during the Revolutionary War (D19).

JACOB, b. 14 Oct 1745; d. 22 Sep 1827 at Staunton, Augusta, Va.; bur. Trinity Church Cem., Staunton; md. (1) 24 Feb 1778 in Orange Co., Va., to MARY COURSEY, b. abt 1757, dau. of James Coursey and wife Winnifred Riddle. Children (Peck)--probably all b. at Staunton: Winnifred (md. Jacob Woltz), Jacob (md. Elizabeth M. Harnsberger), John H. (md. Mary M. McCreery), Henry, Ellen (md. Abraham Shepherd), George Washington, John Adams (md. Elizabeth Paul), and David S. (md. Elizabeth Mary Thompson).

Jacob md. (2) CATHERINE A., b. 1766 in Pennsylvania. (Note: this may have been his third marriage as one Jacob Peck also married on 9 Mar 1789 in Augusta Co., Va., to Mrs. Elizabeth (Butt) Daken, dau. of Wendell Butt.) Jacob lived at Staunton from 1771 until his death (D11). In his will written in 1825 and probated in 1827 in Augusta Co. (B31, 16:103), he provided for the disposition and care of his several slaves. Jacob was a Revolutionary War soldier in Capt. Smith's Co., Augusta Co. Militia (D22).

JOHN, b. 1750; d. 1820 in Botetourt Co.; md. 1778 to MARY HICKLE, b. abt 1757 and dau. of Lewis Hickle. Children (Peck)--b. Botetourt Co.: Susannah (md. Allen Jones), Lewis (md. Mary Jones), Margaret (md. John Sites), Jacob Carper (md. (1) Jane Waggoner, md. (2) Martha (Patsy) Walker), George (md. Celia Darwin), Sarah Ann (md. William Connell), William (md. Lumina Finch), Jane (md. Robert Kyle), Elizabeth (md. William Shepherd), and Martin (md. Ann Ammen).

John was a surveyor and lived at Fincastle, Va. He paid taxes on 375 a. in Botetourt Co. in 1782 (B25) and owned land on Catawba Creek (B7, 3:328, 4:335, 5:311). John was an ensign and civil servant in the Revolutionary War (D19) and later was captain of the Botetourt Co. Militia (D20). His will was dated 15 Aug 1820 and was probated Sep 1820 in Botetourt Co. (B28, C:279).

ADAM, b. 1753 near Sharpsburg; d. 13 Feb 1817 at Mossy Creek, Jefferson, Tenn.; bur. Jefferson City Cem., Jefferson Co.; md. 29 June 1777 in Botetourt Co. to ELIZABETH SHARKEY. Elizabeth, dau. of Patrick Sharkey and wife Ann, was b. 1757 probably in Va.; d. 1832 in Botetourt Co. Children (Peck)--probably oldest five b. in Botetourt Co. and remainder at Mossy Creek, Jefferson Co., Tenn.: Ann (md. Joseph Goodson), Jacob (md. Sophia M. Talbott), Nicholas Sharkey (md. Nancy Henderson), Benjamin (md. (1) Mary Henderson, (2) Keziah McSpalden, (3) Mrs. Mary Myers), Elliott (md. Nancy Campbell), Jane (md. (1) Archibald Campbell, (2) Michael Bright, Sr., (3) Mr. Tunnell), James Hawkins, Adam (md. Elizabeth Gale), Moses Looney (md. Susan Mynatt), Patrick (md. Elizabeth Gale), William Blount (md. Ann J. Rivers), and Henry Hopkins (md. (1) Elizabeth Cox, (2) Harriet (Campbell) Blackburn.

Adam was the first of the Peck family to be recorded in Botetourt Co. and was appointed "constable about the courthouse" on 15 Feb 1775 (D11). On 12 Mar 1778 Adam was conveyed two lots in Fincastle by Botetourt Co. (B7, 2:406). Between 1778 and 1794 he bought and sold several tracts of land in Botetourt Co. including tracts on Catawba Creek and Crooked Run. Land records record him as a resident of the provisional State of Franklin in 1791 and of Jefferson Co., Territory South of the Ohio River, in 1794.

Adam was an ensign in the Revolutionary War and served in the Battle of King's Mountain (D20). He settled at Mossy Creek, now Jefferson City, Jefferson, Tenn., and received 1,000 acres of land there from North Carolina as a result of his military service. He

was also a member of the first legislature of Tennessee. In his will dated 12 Dec 1814 and probated in Jefferson Co. on 12 Mar 1817 (B15, 2:44), he provided for the disposition of the large estate he had accumulated. Elizabeth's will was dated 20 Mar 1832 and was probated on 11 June 1832 (B15, 3:190). The inscription on the tombstone of Adam and wife Elizabeth reads, "Pioneers to the West from Virginia - 1788" (C13).

*MARY, b. 1755; d. prior 11 Sep 1826 in Jefferson Co., Tenn.; md. 1773-4 probably near Sharpsburg to JACOB CARPER. (Refer to Family 232-233 for additional details.)

JOSEPH, b. 1757; d. 1841 or 1842; md. 1 Nov 1792 in Botetourt Co. to SUSANNAH FRANKLIN, b. abt 1771. Children (Peck)--b. Fincastle, Botetourt, Va.: Jacob Franklin (md. Jane Waggoner), James, Mary (md. Leonard H. Williamson), Alexander D. (md. Edna Hickman), Eleanor (md. Thompson H. Lane), Diana (md. Jacob S. Deisher), Elizabeth (md. Alexander Thompson), Madison M. (md. Sarah G. Deyerle), Edward Benjamin (md. Ann Eliza Allen), and Hester Ann (md. Alexander C. Deyerle). Joseph and his family resided at Fincastle.

HESTER ANN, b. 1760; d. 1835; md. 1775 to ISAAC VAN METER. Isaac, son of Henry Van Meter and wife Hannah Pyle, was b. 1750 in Berkeley Co., W. Va.; d. 1798. Children (Van Meter)--b. Virginia: Placentia M. (md. (1) Samuel McFerran, (2) John Allen), Hannah (md. Thomas McFerran), Mary Ann (md. Charles Hedrick), Elizabeth (md. Benjamin Carper), Jacob (md. Patsy Ushur Shrewsbury), Joseph (md. Damaris Lackland), Sarah Hawkins (md. Eleazer Sweetland), and Curtis.

Isaac Van Meter was a Revolutionary War soldier, having served in one of George Rogers Clark's expeditions, for which he was allotted 108 acres of bounty land in Ohio (D11). Isaac and his family resided at Pattonsburg, Buchanan, Va. (D20). While Isaac died intestate, the will of his wife Hester Ann was written July 1835 and proved in August 1835 in Botetourt Co. (B28, E:600).

HANNAH, b. 1762; d. after 1840 prob. in Stampers Creek Twp., Orange, Ind.; md. (1) 21 Oct 1788 in Botetourt Co. to PETER HAHN, JR., who d. around 1800; md. (2) about 1804 to DANIEL GRAHAM, d. 1818; md. (3) 1826 in Orange Co., Ind., to JOSHUA REID (29 Oct 1755-May 1838), a Revolutionary War soldier. Hannah probably had children by first marriage, none by later marriages. Hannah moved with her third husband to Paoli, Orange, Ind., where she was recorded as a widow in 1840 (D11).

Jacob Peck--the name by which Johann Jakob Peck was known in America; the surname Peck originally apparently interchangeable with Beck--came to Virginia about 1740; it is reported he was accompanied to America by brothers Heinrich and Ludwig, who settled "in the North" (D20). Jesse Wm. Peck, Sr., records in his book (D11) that Jacob in one of his depositions stated that he came from Wuerttemberg, Germany; he also reports that a letter--kept in the family for many years but then destroyed in a house fire--had been written by a cousin on 27 Apr 1769 and sent from Ebingen, Wuerttemberg, to Herrn Jacob Beck residing in Maryland near Scharbsburg. (Note: in following up on this lead Dr. J. A. Kelly of Haverford, Pa., searched the records of the Evangelical Church in Ebingen. His findings included that one Hans Jakob Beck, who was b. 7 July 1723 and whose parents were probably Jakob and Maria, had "went to America and was domiciled in Maryland" [by translation] (D11).

From the time of their marriage until 1747 Jacob and wife Lydia resided on Borden land in that part of Frederick Co., Va., later made into Clarke Co., not far from Opequon Creek (D11). In a road order dated July 1744 (B24, 1:15) the residence of Jacob Peck along with the residences of the Widow Borden, Edward Rogers (brother-in-law of Lydia), and Edward Corder (a witness of the

will of Benjamin Borden, Sr.) were given as along the "road from Gregory's Ford to the Top of the Ridge," i.e. a part of the road from Howell's Ford or Ashby's Ferry to Ashby's Gap (D11).

Jacob was naturalized on 5 May 1747 in Frederick Co., Va., after having taken the necessary oaths of allegiance to British authority (B24, 2:238). He indicated he was a German Protestant, and stated he had been living in Virginia over seven years and had otherwise complied with the English laws for naturalization. He also produced a certificate provided him by Rev. George Samuel Klug, a "minister of the gospel for the Germans of Orange Co.," Va., verifying that he had received the Sacrament of the Lords Supper in order to obtain naturalization. He is credited by DAR as providing civil service during the Revolutionary War (D19).

Shortly after 1748 Jacob and his family moved from then Frederick Co., Va., across the Potomac River into Frederick Co., Md. On 18 Aug 1749 Jacob Peck of Frederick Co., Md., bought of Henry Bechtoll (or Beckdahl) and wife Barbara of Virginia for L110 a 130-a. plantation called Lambson on the waters of Little Tuscorarah (B27, B:72). When Jacob Peck and wife Lydia sold the tract Lambson on 2 Mar 1753 to George Lay of Frederick Co., Md., for L160, it was recorded as containing 196 a. (B27, E:105). In a deed dated 21 Nov 1760 a tract of 87 a. named Good Wife was described as being on "the southwest side of a branch that falls into Tuscarorous [Creek] which falls into Monocacy, about 3/4 mile above Jacob Peck's plantation" (B27, F:1236).

Jacob's plantation, on which he operated a mill in 1754, was further described as being on the road from Frederick, Md., to Yellow Springs, Md. (D30, p. 178). As a pioneer of "Old Monocacy" further reference was made to Jacob Peck as follows: "In 1749 Henry and Susanna Bachdold (or Bechtel as the name was recorded) sold their land to Jacob Peck, who operated a fulling(?) mill on the Creek there (Frederick Land Records, B:72). The November Court of 1750 received a petition from the "inhabitants on the east side of the mountain on the Tuscarora, having no road into Frederickstown that can be passed over with a wagon or with loads on horseback. They asked 'that a road be laid out from Frederickstown to Jacob Peck's fulling mill on the Tuscarora'. This resulted in the road from Frederick to Yellow Springs. In [1753] George Loy purchased 'Lambston' from Jacob Peck for L160 (E:105) and later devised it to his son-in-law Peter Shaver" (D30, p. 179).

Jacob may have remained in the Frederick-Yellow Spring vicinity for a time, but family tradition has it he later moved back across the Potomac River to near New Mecklenburg (now Shepherdstown), Jefferson, W. Va., and lived there until 1780 when he removed to Fincastle, Botetourt, Va. Another Jacob Peck, whose wife was Mary, resided in Frederick Co., Md., from 1752 to 1761 (B27, B:557, G:219), but any connection with the ancestor Jacob Peck seems improbable. Also, one Jacob Peck on 19 Jan 1787 bought a parcel of land called French Tract located in Washington Co., Md., on Potomac River from William Good, both parties of Washington Co. (B34, E:303), but this was several years after the ancestor Jacob Peck had moved to Botetourt Co.

Jacob was taxed in 1782 on five acres in Botetourt Co. (B25). This five acres was located near Fincastle and had been purchased by Jacob on 14 Sep 1782 from Thomas McMakin (B7, 3:115). It is evident that it was on this tract that Jacob built his home, about 1/4 mile north of Fincastle; here he and Lydia remained for the rest of their lives (D11). On 11 Jan 1785 he was conveyed another 50 a. near Fincastle by Botetourt County (B7, 3:361). By 1796 he had begun making his home with his son-in-law, Jacob Carper, to whom he willed his Dutch (sic German) Bible (D11).

It is speculated that the large Borden land holdings in the general Fincastle vicinity prompted Jacob and Lydia to move to Botetourt Co. in about 1780. In his will dated 8 Oct 1800 and proved Oct 1801 in Botetourt Co. (B28,

B:4), he authorized his executors to recover the 1000 a. conveyed by his father-in-law to his wife Lydia and devised the tract equally between his five sons and three daughters, whom he named. His wife Lydia not being mentioned in his will assures that she had died prior to Jacob writing his will on 8 Oct 1800.

It is reported that Jacob Peck had brought suit against the Borden estate for his wife's inheritance but after prolonged litigation the Pecks accepted a settlement in 1839 and then withdrew from further participation in the suit (D9).

Will of Jacob Peck

In the name of God, Amen; the eighth day of October in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred. I, Jacob Peck of Botetourt County in Virginia being weak in body and sound in mind and memory thanks be given unto God for it, therefore calling unto mind the mortality of my body I do make this my last will and testament, that is to say principally and first of all I give and recommend my soul unto God that gave it an my body I recommend to the Earth to be buried in a Christianlike manner at the direction of my executors nothing doubting but the at the General Resurrection I shall receive the same again by the Almighty Power of God.

And touching such worldly estate as it pleased God to bless me with in this life I give and dispose of the same in manner and form following. Imprimis, I will all my funeral charges and just debts be paid and satisfied. Item, I give, will, and bequeath all my personal and real estate in Botetourt County to be sold and the money equally divided among my children, namely, my son Benjamin, my son Jacob, my son John, my son Adam, my son Joseph, my daughter Mary, my daughter Hester, and my daughter Hannah.

I also will and bequeath all my part and interest in the lands ordered to be sold in my father-in-law's will devised to his daughter Lydia whom I intermarried with the said land lying in Rockbridge County and elsewhere to be equally divided among my five sons and all bearing a proportionate part of all the cost at law and other expenses together with the time lost in obtaining said lands. I give for compensation to my five sons for suing for one thousand acres of land devised to Lydia by the testament of her father, and if recovered said land of one thousand acres to be equally divided between my five sons and three daughters, named, Benjamin, Jacob, John, Adam, Joseph, Mary, Ester, and Hannah.

Except one large chest I give to my son Jacob Peck and one large Dutch Bible I give to my son-in-law Jacob Carper. I constitute and appoint my son Benjamin Peck and my son Jacob Peck executors of this my last will and testament to sue for and recover the said above mentioned land. This will I publish to be my last will and testament and all other wills made by me to be null and void.

Signed, sealed, and delivered in
the presence of us:

Jacob Peck (seal)

Jacob Peck
Joseph Borden
Thomas McFerran
Mary Sautern (her X)
Susannah Way (her X)

This instrument of writing purporting to be the last will and testament of Jacob Peck, decd., was exhibited in court and proved by the oath of Thomas McFerran and Susannah Way witnesses thereto subscribed and thereupon ordered to be recorded; whereupon on motion of Benjamin Peck one of the executors

therein named who first made oath and with security entered into and acknowledged bond according to law, certificate is granted him for obtaining probate thereof in due form.

Teste: Hy Bowyer C.M.C,

(Will recorded in Botetourt Co., Va., in Will Book B, page 4.)

(B7, B15, B23, B24, B25, B27, B28, B29, B30, B31, B34, C2, C5, C13, C14, D2, D7, D9, D11, D19, D20, D21, D22, D24)

FAMILY 928-929

NICHOLAS CARPER (1710) and MARGARETHA (1710)

NICHOLAS CARPER was b. 1710 (age 22 in 1732) in Germany; md. MARGARETHA, b. abt 1710 in Germany. Traditional son (Carper):

*JACOB, b. abt 1730 probably in Germany; married (name of wife unknown).
(Refer to Family 464-465 for additional details.)
Probably other children.

Nicholas Carper, a Palatine probably of southwest Germany, came to America in 1732; it is believed he was the emigrant ancestor (D7). He arrived on the ship Samuel, Hugh Percy, Commander, at Philadelphia on 11 Aug 1732, having sailed from Rotterdam but lastly by way of Cowes, England (for refueling) (D6, 1:55-56). On the three listings of the ship list he was variously recorded as Nicholas Corber (age 22), Niklas Korper, and Niklas Kerper. Although no listing of females or males under 16 years of age was made on the ship lists, it is believed his wife and at least one son Jacob accompanied him to America (D7).

According to family tradition Nicholas Carper "settled in Berks Co., Penn., until the Indians got too bad, and then about 1750 he and his family moved to Maryland. Some of the Carpers stayed in Pennsylvania but Nicholas settled around Sharpsburg in Western Maryland. The Carpers married into the Peck family and all of them [then living] moved to Botetourt County, Virginia, about the time of the Revolutionary War.... No record [has been found] of Nicholas or his wife's death and none of [son] Jacob's birth. In fact, this is the weak branch of our genealogical tree, because we have no documented proof connecting the immigrant Nicholas Carper with Jacob Carper [b. abt 1730] of Maryland" (Grubbs, D7; p. 21-24).

Finding Nicholas Carber (sic Carper) recorded in land conveyances of Berks Co., Pa., confirms the Berks Co. connection of the apparent Carper immigrant ancestor. On 30 May 1740--but not originally recorded in the Philadelphia Co. records until 11 Jan 1762--Nicholas Carber of Plymouth, Philadelphia Co., bought of William Allen and wife Margaret of the city of Philadelphia for L150 a tract of 250 a. described as located on the Schuylkill River in Chester Co. (B26, A:2:363). When Nicholas Carber and wife Margaret sold 100 acres off of this tract for L150 to Daniel Joader on 18 Dec 1744, the grantors were given as residents of Coventry, Chester Co. (B26, B:2:477). Of special note is that in the signature block for the latter deed, Nicholas signed the deed in German as Nicholas Carper and his wife made her mark (M) for Margaretha Kerper. A fourth spelling of the surname under Nicholas Casber was used in recording the deed. These two deeds confirm the variant early spellings of the Carper surname.

When Nicholas and wife sold the remaining 150 a. of the 250-acre tract, the names of the grantors were given as Nicholas Corper and Margaret Carper in the signature block of the deed (B26, B:2:479). This remaining part of the

original tract was conveyed on 9 May 1748 by the grantors, once again shown as residents of Plymouth, Philadelphia Co., to Anthony Sell, farmer of Chester Co., for L280. Plymouth given as the residence of Nicholas and Margaret in 1740 and 1744 was apparently the locale known today as Plymouth Meeting--named for early Quaker settlement--near Norristown in present-day Montgomery Co., Pa.

When Berks Co. was created in 1752, the southeast corner of that county lying on the south side of the Schuylkill River was taken from Chester Co.; and this undoubtedly comprised a part of old Coventry Twp., the name yet retained in extreme northern Chester Co. It was in this portion of Chester Co. later included in Berks Co. that lay the 250-acre Carper tract. During the 1740-8 period the land on the north side of the river opposite the Carper land was still a part of Philadelphia Co.; and the uncertainty and temporary nature of county boundaries in that vicinity apparently led to the common practice of recording land conveyances for the area at the Philadelphia Co. courthouse. It is of note that the two grantor deeds of 1744 and 1748 were not transcribed into the Berks Co. land records until 16 May 1776.

Several Carper families also show up in Frederick Co., Va., during the last half of the 18th century, and it seems probable that they also connect some way with the Berks Co. Carpers. In 1787 Carpers paying personal property taxes in Frederick Co. were William, John, Philip (and Frederick K.), and Phillip, Jr. (A1).

(A1, B26, D6, D7, D8)

FAMILY 932-933 AND PECK ANCESTRY OF JOHANN JAKOB PECK (Ahn. 466)

The following Peck ancestral line going back to about 1513 in Germany has been researched principally by Dr. J. A. Kelly (D11) and is based on the records of the Evangelical Church at Ebingen, Scharvarzne, Wuerttemberg. Based on these records the following is given as the paternal ancestral line of Johann Jakob Peck (Ahn. 466):

- *HANS PECK (or BECK) was b. 1513 in Wuerttemberg; d. 13 Mar 1593 at Ebingen; md. ANNA, b. 1530 and d. 20 Feb 1617 at Ebingen. Hans was the father of
- *MICHAEL PECK, b. 21 Nov 1567 at Ebingen; d. 21 Oct 1635 at Ebingen; md. 25 Nov 1597 at Ebingen to MARIA SCHEMPP. Maria, dau. of Hans Schempp, was b. 30 Aug 1577 at Ebingen; d. 25 Feb 1637 at Ebingen. Michael was the father of
- *MARTIN PECK was b. 29 Aug 1600 at Ebingen; d. 8 Nov 1634 at Ebingen; md. 25 July 1625 at Ebingen to BARBARA LANDENBERGER. Barbara, dau. of Matthias Landenberger, was b. 4 June 1605 at Ebingen; md. (1) Martin Peck; md. (2) 1 Feb 1636 to Jacob Strauss. Martin was the father of
- *MICHAEL PECK, b. 3 Oct 1630 at Ebingen; d. 30 Nov 1703 at Ebingen; md. 9 July 1661 at Ebingen to ANNA BARBARA MATTHES. Anna Barbara, dau. of Hans Matthes, was b. 5 Feb 1643 at Ebingen; d. 2 Jan 1706 at Ebingen. Michael was the father of
- *JOHANN JACOB PECK was b. 4 Sep 1678 at Ebingen; burger of Ebingen; d. 19 June 1737 at Ebingen; md. 8 Nov 1719 at Ebingen to ANNA MARIA HUMMEL. Anna Maria, dau. of Hans Jakob Hummel, was b. 15 Oct 1686 at Ebingen; d. 30 Sep 1769 at Ebingen. Johann Jacob was the father of
- *JOHANN JACOB PECK was b. 7 July 1723 at Ebingen; md. LYDIA BORDEN. (Refer to Family 466-467 for additional details.)

(D11)

FAMILY 934-935

BENJAMIN BORDEN (1675) and ZERURIAH WINTER (1679)

BENJAMIN, son of Benjamin Borden (1649) and wife Abigail Grover (1651), was b. 6 Apr 1675 at Middletown, Monmouth, N. Jer.; d. 1743 near Winchester, Frederick, Va.; md. ZERURIAH WINTER. Zeruriah, dau. of William Winter (1647) and wife Hannah Grover (1651), was b. abt 1679; d. after 7 Aug 1746 and probably about 1752 in Frederick (now Clarke) Co., Va. Children (Borden)--all except the youngest son Joseph b. in Monmouth Co., N. Jer.:

- HANNAH, b. abt 1705; d. 1799-1800; md. EDWARD ROGERS. Children (Rogers)--Edward, Jr., Daughter (md. Samuel Pearson), Hannah (md. Elijah Dungan), Eunice (md. Moses Walton), Elizabeth (md. John Brownley), and Daughter (md. Christopher Heiskell. Hannah remained in Frederick Co., Va.
- ABIGAIL, b. abt 1707; md. (1) JACOB WORTHINGTON, d. abt 1749; (2) JAMES PRITCHARD. Children (Worthington): Esther (md. Mr. Pugh) and Rachel (md. William Coltrane). Children (Pritchard): James, Jr. After her second marriage Abigail settled in Orange Co., N. Car. (D26).
- REBECCA, b. abt 1709; md. THOMAS BRANSON, son of Thomas Branson and wife Elizabeth Day. Children (Branson): Levi (md. Mary Maynor) and Eli. This Branson family settled about 1752 in western Chatham Co., N. Car.
- MERCY, b. abt 1711; md. (1) WILLIAM FERNLEY; md. (2) before 1754 to TOBIAS BURKE, later divorced; md. (3) ROBERT MCKAY. Son Thomas Fernley, b. 20 Sep 1744 and md. Martha Melson.
- BENJAMIN, JR., b. abt 1713; d. Mar 1753 in Rockbridge Co., Va.; md. 1744 to MAGDALEN WOODS, dau. of Michael Woods and wife Mary Campbell. Magdalen md. (1) John McDowell, (2) Benjamin Borden, Jr., and (3) in 1754 to John Bowyer. Children (Borden): Martha (md. (1) Benjamin Hawkins, (2) Robert Harvey), Hannah, and Elizabeth. After his marriage Benjamin, Jr., resided at Fairfield north of Lexington, Rockbridge, Va.; he was a justice in Augusta Co., Va., and a captain of the Augusta Co. Militia (D26).
- DEBORAH, b. abt 1715 (or probably a few years later); d. 1799; md. GEORGE HENDRY, b. 16 Jan 1725/6, d. 1782, son of Thomas Hendry and wife Ann Thomas. Children (Hendry): William, Abraham (md. Sarah), Isaac, George, Elizabeth, Rebecca (md. Jeremiah Dungan), Nancy (md. Mr. Morley), and Mary (md. Mr. Humphries).
- JOHN, b. abt 1717; d. 1798; md. ANN. Children (Borden): Joseph (md. Mary Echols), William (md. Eleanor Hudson), Benjamin (md. Lucy Wheeler), John, Mercy (md. John Wheeler), Nancy (md. Andrew McWilliams), Rebecca (md. William Overstreet), Sarah (md. Enoch McCoy), and Margaret (md. Nichodemus Kieth). John removed from Frederick Co., Va., to Bedford Co., Va., and thence to Knox Co., Tenn. (D26).
- ELIZABETH, b. abt 1719; d. 1751; md. abt 1750 to JOHN NICHOLAS. Son William Nicholas of Oglethorpe, Ga.
- *LYDIA, b. abt 1721; d. 1799-1800 near Fincastle, Botetourt, Va.; md. abt 1743 to JOHANN JACOB PECK. (Refer to Family 466-467 for further details.)
- JOSEPH, b. abt 1723 in Frederick Co., Va.; d. 1803; md. JANE WARREN. Children (Borden): Mary (md. William Saunders), Levi (md. Charlotte Beck), Rebecca (md. Richard Sasnett), and Benjamin J. J. Joseph and family moved to North Carolina.

Benjamin Borden and Zeruriah Winter were full first cousins, both being grandchildren of James Grover (1619). Benjamin settled in Monmouth Co., N. Jer., first at Middletown but prior to 1715 became a resident of Freehold Twp. He was a member of the New Jersey legislature and was a prominent New Jersey

landowner. On 8 Jan 1700 he bought from Anthony Woodward a tract of 1,000 a. in the Great Docwra Patent located south of Arbeytown, N. Jer. (D9). He also owned lands in Philadelphia Co. on Mahanatawney Creek (B33, F:297, I:552). In a petition by the inhabitants of East Jersey to the King of England dated 20 June 1701, signers included Benjamin Borden, James Borden, James Grover, and William Winter (D27, 2:394; 1881).

Benjamin and his family joined the first Quaker caravan moving in 1732 to Orange Co., Va. (later Frederick Co. and now Clarke Co.). He was appointed one of the justices of the newly formed county of Orange on 21 Jan 1734; he was also appointed one of the original justices of Frederick Co. but died in 1743 before the county became fully organized (D26).

After moving to Virginia Benjamin appeared frequently in land transactions in various parts of the Shenandoah Valley. It was estimated he owned some 130,000 a. of land in Virginia and New Hersey at the time of his death in 1743 (D11). He made his home on "Borden's Great Spring Tract" of 3,143 a. in present-day Clarke Co., Va., granted to him on 3 Oct 1734. His land ownership also included 850 a. on the west slope of Apple Pie Ridge in Frederick Co., 1132 a. on Bullskin Marsh near Summit Point, W. Va., and a large tract on Smith Creek in Shenandoah Co., Va. (D28, p. 25). Benjamin also acquired at least 16,733 acres of land in Botetourt Co. (D11, citing Kegley's Virginia Frontier, p. 62-63).

His largest and most famous land holding was the 92,100 acres granted him by King George II on 6 Nov 1739 on the headwaters of James River, located mostly in later Rockbridge Co.; it was named "Borden's Great Tract" but became known as "Borden's Manor." Litigation over the estate of Benjamin Borden began prior to the year 1800, and was not ended until 1907; while this family litigation depleted the estate and yielded each claimant only a small sum, it did result in the preservation of family records (D11).

Benjamin was an acquaintance and neighbor of Lord Fairfax. He is said to have been an agent of Fairfax in the settlement of the Northern Neck; although this claim "is so ancient and so frequent that it may have some substance," yet documentary proof of the connection is lacking (D26). the home plantation of Benjamin did adjoin Greenway Court, the home of Lord Fairfax.

Will of Benjamin Borden

In the name of God, Amen, the third day of April in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and forty two: I, Benjamin Borden of Orange County in Virginia, yeoman, being in good estate of health and of sound mind and memory thanks be to God for it; therefore calling unto mind the mortality of my body I do make this my last will and testament that is to say principally and first of all I give and recommend my soul unto God that gave it and for my body I recommend it to the earth to be buried in a Christianlike manner at the disposition of my executors, nothing doubting but in the general resserrection I shall receive the same again by the might power of God; and touching such worldly estate it hath pleased God to bless me with in this life I give and dispose of the same in a manner and form following.

Imprimis, I will all the funeral charges and my just debts should be paid and satisfied.

Item, I give and bequeath to Zeruriah Borden my wife all the improvements and what lands she has or shall have occasion to clear as long as she remains my widow, and if she should get married then she shall have but half of the improvement and what land she and her husband should have occasion

to clear of this plantation I now live on in Orange County in Virginia on Spought Run during her natural life.

Item, I give and bequeath to my son Benjamin Borden and my son John Borden and my son Joseph Borden to them and their heirs and assigns forever this plantation and the lot on the said Spought Run that my mill stands of the one hundred and fifty acres that I have agreed to rent to my said three sons to be equally divided between my son Benjamin and my son John and my son Joseph Borden in quality to be divided by way of lots drawing between my sons Benjamin and John and Joseph Borden guardians, that is all this plantation I now live on excepting eight hundred acres I give to Edward Rogers and his wife Hannah Rogers and the heirs of her body forever, and five hundred acres I give William Fearnley and my daughter Mercey his wife to them and their heirs forever.

Item, I give to my daughter Hannah Rogers but five shillings she having her portion before. My will is all my lands and estate that I have in New Jersey should be sold and all of my land at Bullskin and my land on Smith Creek and North Sherrando (sic. Shenandoah) and all my entries everywhere and all my lands on the waters of the James River should be sold excepting five thousand acres of land that is all good I give to five of my daughters, that is, Abigail Worthington and Rebecca Branson, and to Debourah Borden and Liddy Borden and to Elizabeth Borden that is one thousand acres of good land apiece to every one of the five daughters above mentioned to them and their heirs and assigns forever.

And all the rest of my land to be sold aforesaid excepting this I now live on to be all sold and equally divided between my wife and my son Benjamin and my son John and my son Joseph and my daughter Abigail Worthington and daughter Deburah Borden and my daughter Elizabeth Borden and my daughter Liddy Borden, and my movables to be divided between my said wife and sons Benjamin and John and Joseph Borden and my aforesaid six daughters Abigail, Rebecca, Mercy, Deburah, Liddy, and Elizabeth Borden.

First before my movable estate be divided there must be taken out my great brown riding horse and my bay mare that come of my great hipshot mare and the best bed with furniture be it good that I have in the house that I give to my wife first and all the rest to be equally between my wife and my aforesaid three sons and my six daughters as aforesaid divided.

I constitute and appoint my wife executrix and my son Benjamin Borden and my son-in-law William Fearnley executors to this my last will and testament and to execute deeds for the land I have sold and ordered to be sold; this will I publish to be my last will and testament and all other wills made by me void.

Sealed and signed in the presence of

Benja. Borden (seal)

Thomas Shery (his mark)
Edward Corder
Thomas Hankins (his mark)
Thomas Roycer

(Will proved in Frederick County Court on Friday the 9th day of December, 1743; will recorded in Frederick Co., Va., Mixed Probate Records, Book 1, p. 4-5.) (Note: corrected spelling, punctuation, and paragraphing have been added for clarity.)

(B32, B33, D9, D11, D26, D27, D28)

FAMILY 1868-1869

BENJAMIN BORDEN (1649) and ABIGAIL GROVER (1651)

BENJAMIN BORDEN, son of Richard Borden (1595) and Joan Fowle (1604), was b. 16 May 1649 at Portsmouth, Newport, R. I.; d. 1720/1728 prob. in Burlington Co., N. Jer.; md. (1) 22 Sep 1670 to ABIGAIL GROVER. Abigail, dau. of James Grover (1619) and wife Rebecca (1625), was b. abt 1651; d. 8 Jan 1720. Children (by Abigail)--born in or resident of Middletown, Monmouth, N. Jer.:

- RICHARD, b. 9 Jan 1672; d. 9 July 1744; md. MARY WORTHLEY. Resided at Evesham, Burlington, N. Jer. Eight children.
- *BENJAMIN, b. 6 Apr 1675; d. 1743 near Winchester, Frederick, Va.; md. ZERURIAH WINTER. (Refer to Family 934-935 for additional details.)
- JAMES, b. 6 Sep 1677; d. Dec 1727; md. MARY. Children (Borden)--probably all b. in Freehold Twp., Monmouth, N. Jer.: Richard, Innocent (md. John Bozworth), Joseph, Phoebe (md. Ben Gardner), Rebecca (md. Joseph Burcham), Abigail (md. Tom Copperwaite), Mary, Helen, and Ann. James Borden of Freehold Twp., Monmouth County, yeoman made his will 23 Dec 1727; it was proved 22 Feb 1730/1 and records the names of his wife Mary and nine children (D27, 23:46; 1901).
- REBECCA, b. 6 June 1680; d. young.
- SAFETY, b. 6 Sep 1682; d. Nov 1757 at Bordentown, Burlington, N. Jer.; md. (1) MARTHA GROVER, dau. of Safety Grover; md. (2) Martha, widow of Thomas Walton. He resided at Freehold, N. J., but later moved to Bordentown, N. Jer.
- AMY, b. 4 Mar 1684; d. after 16 Aug 1760; md. Josiah Foster (1682--abt 1770). Three children.
- JOSEPH, b. 12 May 1687; d. 22 Sep 1765 in Burlington Co.; md. (1) SUSANNAH GROVER, dau. of Joseph Grover and wife Hannah Lawrence. Daughter by Susannah (Borden): Rebecca md. Joseph Brown. Joseph md. (2) ANN CONOVER (originally COUVENHOVEN). Children by Ann (Borden): Ann (md. Joshua Potts), Joseph (md. Elizabeth Rogers), Hannah (md. John Lawrence), Elizabeth (md. Thomas Douglas), Abigail (md. (1) Mr. Clayton, (2) Micajah How), Amy (md. Thomas Potts), and Rebecca (md. Joseph Brown). Joseph was the founder of Bordentown in Burlington Co., N. Jer., where he had a general mercantile store and operated a stage-boat and stage-wagon from Philadelphia to Perth Amboy by way of Bordentown (D9).
- JONATHAN, b. 14 Apr 1690.
- DAVID, b. 8 Mar 1692; d. young.
- SAMUEL, b. 8 Apr 1696; d. after 1751. He was apparently an invalid as his eldest brother Richard provided for his support through his will (D11).

Benjamin md. (2) SUSANNAH, who survived him; by her he had no children. "Soon after 1665 he [Benjamin] settled on some of his father's lands in Monmouth County, N. Jer., residing first at Shrewsbury and later for many years at Middletown, [from] whence he removed in 1713 to Evesham, Burlington County [N. Jer.]. He was a justice of the peace in 1685. In 1692 and 1694 he was elected to the assembly from Middletown, and in 1695 and 1698 as one of the six members from Monmouth County. He was a road commissioner, 1693-1711. Like his father, he became a large landowner" (D26). He was a resident of Auchweas, Burlington, N. Jer., in 1718. An inventory of the estate of Benjamin Borden of Evesham Twp., Burlington Co., yeoman, was made on 5 June 1728 by Hugh Sharp and John Hollingshead; and on 6 June 1728 these two were sureties on the administrative bond of Susannah Borden, widow of Benjamin Borden (D27, 23:46; 1901).

(D9, D11, D26, D27)

FAMILY 1870-1871

WILLIAM WINTER (1617) and HANNAH GROVER (1651)

WILLIAM WINTER was b. abt 1647; d. 1733; md. 1688 to HANNAH GROVER, b. abt 1651, dau. of James Grover (1619) and wife Rebecca (1625). Hannah md. (1) Richard Gardiner, the first clerk of the Monmouth Co. Court, who d. 3 Dec 1687. By her first marriage Hannah had children (Gardiner): Richard, Jr., and Joseph. Hannah md. (2) WILLIAM WINTER. Children (Winter):

*ZERURIAH, b. abt 1679; d. after 7 Aug 1746; md. BENJAMIN BORDEN.

(Refer to Family 934-935 for additional details.)

JOHN, md. and had issue, two children.

ANDREW, d. 1760; md. and had issue, five children; resided at Middletown, N. Jer.

JAMES.

REBECCA, md. RICHARD APPELEGATE, d. 1732/3, son of Thomas Applegate and wife Johanna Gibbons. Resided at Middletown; eight children.

William resided at Middletown and was a cordwainer and constable. His will was dated 34 July 1722 and proved 13 June 1733 (D11).

(D9, D11, D26)

FAMILY 3736-3737

RICHARD BORDEN (1595) and JOANE FOWLE (1604)

RICHARD BORDEN, son of Matthew Borden (1563) and Joan (1571), was b. 1595; christened (baptized) 22 Feb 1595/6 at Headcorn, Kent, Eng.; d. 25 May 1671 at Portsmouth, Newport, R. I.; bur. Friends Burial Ground, Portsmouth; md. 28 Sep 1625 at Headcorn Church, Kent, England, to JOANE FOWLE. Joane, son of Richard Fowle (1569) and (Mrs.) Mary Fikes (1575), was b. 15 Feb 1604 in Kent Co., Eng.; d. 15 July 1688 at Portsmouth. Children (Borden): first five b. at Headcorn, Eng., remainder at Portsmouth, R. I:

RICHARD, chr. 9 July 1626; probably d. young.

THOMAS, chr. 3 Oct 1627; d. 25 Nov 1676; md. 20 Jan 1663/4 to MARY HARRIS, d. 22 Mar 1717/18, dau. of William Harris and wife Susanna. Eight children. Thomas resided at Portsmouth and Providence, R. I.

FRANCIS, chr. 23 Dec 1628 at Cranbrook, Kent, Eng.; d. 19 Mar 1705/6 at Shrewsbury, Monmouth, N. Jer.; md. 12 June 1677 to JANE VICKERS. Children (Borden): Richard, Francis, Joyce (md. John Hance, Jr.), and Thomas. Moved from Providence, R. I., to Shrewsbury about 1665. In his will dated 24 May 1703 Francis Borden of Shrewsbury, yeoman, devised property to his wife Jane, his four children whom he named, and his brother John Borden; he appointed his wife Jane and son Francis executors, and the will was proved 9 May 1706 (D27, 23:46; 1901).

MARY, chr. 13 Jan 1632/3; d. prior 1691; md. JOHN COOKE of Portsmouth, d. 1691, son of Thomas Cook. Eleven children.

ELIZABETH, chr. 25 May 1634; probably d. young.

MATTHEW, b. May 1638; d. 5 July 1708; md. 4 Mar 1673/4 to SARAH CLAYTON, b. 1654 and d. 19 Apr 1735. Lived at Portsmouth but also owned land in New Jersey; had 10 children.

JOHN, b. Sep 1640; d. 4 June 1716 at Portsmouth; md. 25 Dec 1670 to MARY EARLE. Mary, dau. of William Earle and wife Mary Walker, was b. 1655 and d. June 1734 Children (Borden): Richard (md. Innocent

Wadell), John, Jr. (md. Sarah Earle), Amey (md. Benjamin Chase), Joseph (md. Sarah Brownell), Thomas (md. Catherine Hull), Hope (md. William Almy, Jr.), Mary, William (md. Alice Hull), and Benjamin. John resided at Portsmouth, R. I.

JOSEPH, b. 3 July 1643; md. HOPE. Three children.

SARAH, b. May 1644; d. 1708; md. 1659 to JONATHAN HOLMES (1633-1713), son of Obadiah Holmes and wife Catherine Hyde. Nine children.

SAMUEL, b. July 1745; d. 1692 (letters of administration issued 8 Feb 1692) in Philadelphia, Pa.; md. 1 June 1679 at Westchester, N. Y., to ELIZABETH CROSSE. Samuel moved from Portsmouth, R. I., to Westchester, N. Y., and afterwards to Philadelphia.

*BENJAMIN, b. 16 May 1649; d. 1720; md. 22 Sep 1670 to ABIGAIL GROVER. (Refer to Family 1868-1869) for additional details.)

AMEY, b. Feb 1653/4; d. 5 Feb 1683/4 at New York; bur. Gravesend, L. I.; md. 27 Mar 1678 to WILLIAM RICHARDSON of Newport, R. I., and Flushing, N. Y. Three children.

Richard inherited land from his father in Headcorn but moved in 1628 to Cranbrook where his wife's relatives lived (D23). As the progenitor of the Bordens of Rhode Island and New Jersey, Richard migrated with his family to Massachusetts in 1634 but was one of the original settlers of Portsmouth Plantations (now Providence), R. I., in 1638 (D26). Richard was a surveyor and owned lands in both Rhode Island and in Monmouth Co., N. Jer. He held many public offices at Portsmouth as well as state treasurer and deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly, 1667 and 1670. This family were Quakers (D23).

Nuncupative Will of Richard Borden

To my widow Joan the old house and fire room with leanto and buttery adjoining, and the little chamber in the new house, and porch chamber adjoining to it; half the use of the great hall, porch room below, cellering and garet of the new house for life. To her also firewood yearly, use of 30 fruit trees in orchard that she may choose, liberty to keep fowls about the house not exceeding 40, and all household goods at her disposal. She was to have 30 ewe sheep kept for her, with their profit and increase; 50 other sheep to halves, three cows kept and their profit, and to have paid her yearly a good well kept beef, 3 well fed swine, 10 bushels of wheat, 20 bushels of Indian corn, 6 bushels of barley malt, and four barrels of cider.

To son Tom all estate in Providence, lands, goods, and chattels (except horsekind), he paying his mother Joane yearly a barrel of pork and a firkin of butter. To son Francis, lands in New Jersey. To son John all lands about new dwelling house of said John Borden, etc. To son Joseph 40 pounds within two years after the death of his mother. To son Samuel 40 pounds, half in six months after death of father and half in six months after death of his mother. To son Benjamin 40 pounds within four years after death of his mother.

To daughter Mary Cook 5 pounds. To daughter Sarah Holmes 40 pounds within six months after death of her mother. To daughter Amy Borden 100 pounds at age of 21. To grand daughter Amy Cook 10 pounds at the age of 18. To son Mathew [the] whole estate after payment of debts and legacies, and if he die without issue said estate not to remain to any brother older.

(Will of Richard Borden May 31, 1671, as made by the Town Council of Portsmouth, R. I., on testimony concerning the wishes of the deceased; executor son Mathew Borden [as taken from D29].

(D9, D23, D26, D29)

JAMES GROVER (1619) and REBECCA (1625)

JAMES GROVER was b. abt 1619 and d. 1686; md. REBECCA, b. abt 1625.
Children (Grover):

- JAMES, b. abt 1647; d. 1715; md. ALICE. Four children. Resided at Middletown, N. Jer.
JOSEPH, b. abt 1749; d. 1688/1689 at Middletown; md. HANNAH LAWRENCE, dau. of William Lawrence, Sr. Seven children. Hannah (Lawrence) Grover md. (2) 9 Jan 1694/5 to Nathaniel Leonard.
*ABIGAIL, b. abt 1651; d. 8 Jan 1720; md. 1 Sep 1670 to BENJAMIN BORDEN. (Refer to Family 1868-1869 for additional details.)
*HANNAH, b. abt 1752; md. (1) RICHARD GARDINER, who d. 3 Dec 1687; md. (2) 1688 to WILLIAM WINTER. (Refer to Family 1870-1871 for additional details).
SAFETY, b. 1658; d. after 1726; md. MERCY. Five or six children. Resided at Middletown; was an ensign, then lieutenant, and lastly a captain in the Middletown militia; and was appointed overseer of the highways for Middletown in 1724 (D11).

James Grover settled in 1648 at Gravesend, Long Island, and was sent by the English colonists of Long Island on a mission to Cromwell in 1655. He received a patent to land in Monmouth Co., N. Jer., in 1663. He held various public offices "including that of deputy to treat with the admirals and commanders of the fleet of the States-General in 1673" (D26). He was the owner of the first iron furnace in New Jersey, was a lieutenant in the first company of New Jersey Militia, 1 Dec 1663, was an organizer of the first Baptist church in New Jersey, and was appointed burgess for Middletown to the first assembly of New Jersey in 1668 (D11).

(D9, D11, D26)

FAMILY 7472-7473

MATTHEW BORDEN (1563) and JOAN (1571)

MATTHEW BORDEN, son of Thomas Borden (1533), was b. abt 1563; chr. 30 Sep abt 1563 at Frittenden, Kent, Eng.; bur. 4 Oct 1620 at Headcorn, Kent, Eng.; md. (1) 21 Feb 1584 Bittenden, Kent, Eng., to ELEANOR TAYLOR. Child (Borden):

THOMAS, chr. 1 Sep 1588 at Bittenden, Kent, Eng.; d. 6 Nov 1611 at Headcorn.

Matthew md. (2) JOAN, b. abt 1571 and d. after 4 Oct 1620. Children (Borden)--all christened at Headcorn:

JOAN, chr. 29 Apr 1593; bur. 11 June 1593 at Headcorn.

JOHN, chr. 28 Apr 1594; d. young.

*RICHARD, chr. 22 Feb 1595/6; d. 25 May 1671 at Portsmouth, Newport, R. I.; bur. Friends Burial Ground, Portsmouth; md. 28 Sep 1625 at Headcorn to JOAN FOWLE. The emigrant to New England. (Refer to Family 3736-3737 for additional details.)

MARY, b. abt 1598; md. 4 May 1620 to JOHN ROE.

WILLIAM, chr. 1 June 1600.

AMY, chr. 26 Apr 1603.

EDWARD, chr. 14 Apr 1605.

JOHN, chr. 22 Feb 1606/7; prob. md. (1) ELIZABETH CLAGGETT; md. (2) JOAN; probably came to America in 1635.

Matthew owned lands in Headcorn, Smarden, and Bletchenden in Kent Co., Eng. He was churchwarden at Headcorn in 1598. His will was dated 26 Sep 1620 and proved 27 Oct 1620 (D23).

(D9, D11, D23)

FAMILY 7474-7475

RICHARD FOWLE (1569) and MARY (1575)

RICHARD FOWLE, son of Thomas Fowle (1540) and wife Joan (1544), was chr. 18 Dec 1569 at Frittenden, Kent, Eng.; bur. 2 Mar 1631/2 at Headcorn, Kent, Eng.; md. (1) unknown by whom he had:

RICHARD, chr. 1 Aug 1601 at Frittenden; md. 13 Apr 1635 probably at Cranbrook, Kent, Eng., to DOROTHY HOLFORD.

Richard md. (2) 3 Sep 1601 at St Margarets, Canterbury, Kent, Eng., to MARY (as Mrs. Mary Filkes), b. abt 1575 and d. 1 Aug 1627 at Headcorn. Children (Fowle)--b. Headcorn:

*JOANE, b. 15 Feb 1604 probably in Kent Co.; d. 15 July 1688 at Portsmouth, Newport, R. I.; md. 28 Sep 1625 to RICHARD BORDEN. (Refer to Family 3736-3737 for additional details.)
ELIZABETH, chr. 12 Mar 1608; md. ROBERT JOSEPH of Dartford, Co. Kent.
JANE, chr. 5 July 1612; md. JOHN BABSON.

Richard Fowle, yeoman, resided at Frittenden and Headcorn.

(D9, D11, D24)

FAMILY 14944-14945 AND CONTINUING BORDEN ANCESTRY
OF MATHEW BORDEN (AHN. 7472)

The following is summarized as the paternal Borden ancestral line of Mathew Borden (AHN. 7472):

- *HENRY BORDEN, b. 1370-1380; md. ROBERGIA, b. abt 1380; children (Borden): *Thomas and Robert (md. Emma Door); family of Headcorn, Kent, Eng. Henry was the father of
- *THOMAS BORDEN, b. abt 1401; d. prior 26 Apr 1469; md. ISABELLA, b. abt 1405. Children (Borden): *John, Henry, and Richard; family of Headcorn. Thomas was the father of
- *JOHN BORDEN, b. abt 1425 at Headcorn; will dated 26 Apr 1469; md. BENETT or BENEDICT TORNER, b. abt 1427, will proved 1518, dau. of Thomas Torner; children (Borden): Roger, *William, Joan, Roberga, Alice, Isabella, and John; family of Headcorn. John was the father of
- *WILLIAM BORDEN, b. abt 1450; will dated 25 Sep 1531; md. (1) JOAN, md. (2) THOMASIN, b. abt 1456; md. (3) ROSE; children by Thomasin (Borden): *Edmund, Edward, Thomas, Elizabeth, Anna, and Katharine; family of Headcorn. William was the father of
- *EDMUND BORDEN, b. abt 1480; will dated 13 Apr 1539, proved 18 June 1539 at Headcorn; md. MARGARET, b. abt 1480; children (Borden): Edward, John, *William, Joan (md. Ralph Champ), Marian (md. John Little), Margaret, Alice, and Julian (female); family of Headcorn. Edmund was the father of

- *WILLIAM BORDEN, b. abt 1510; will proved 8 June 1557; md. JOAN, b. abt 1512 and d. after 28 Jan 1559/60; children (Borden):
 *Thomas, Edward (md. Margaret), John, Stephen, Elizabeth, Thomasine, Ann or Agnes, and Edmond; family of Headcorn. William was the father of
- *THOMAS BORDEN, b. abt 1533 at Headcorn; will dated 13 Apr 1587; bur. 21 Apr 1592 at Headcorn; md. (1) unknown; md. (2) 2 May 1584 to the widow Margaret Reader (a widow), bur. 25 Sep 1589 at Headcorn. Children by first wife, name unknown (Borden): Thomas, *Mathew, Joan, and Agnes (md. James Gorham). Thomas was the father of
- *MATHEW BORDEN, b. abt 1563. (See Family 7472-7473 for additional details.)

(D24, D25)

FAMILY 14948-14949 AND CONTINUING FOWLE ANCESTRY
 OF RICHARD FOWLE (AHN. 7474)

The following is summarized as the paternal Fowle ancestral line of Richard Fowle (AHN. 7474):

- *THOMAS FOWLE, b. 1488 at Marden, Kent, Eng.; will dated 7 Nov 1514; md. JOHANE, b. abt 1492 at Marden and bur. 5 May 1572 of Frittenden, Kent., Eng.; children (Fowle): Constance and *Richard; family probably resided at Frittenden. Thomas was the father of
- *RICHARD FOWLE, chr. 8 Sep 1514 at Frittenden; bur. 5 May 1572 at Frittenden; md. (name of wife unknown); children (Fowle): *Thomas, Alice, Joane, and Daughter (md. Mr. Donner); family resided at Frittenden. Richard was the father of
- *THOMAS FOWLE, b. abt 1540 at Frittenden; bur. 25 Aug 1592; md. (1) at Frittenden 22 Oct 1564 ELIZABETH CARRE, by whom had a son; md. (2) JOANE, bur. 21 May 1570 at Frittenden, by whom he had children (Fowle): Joane (md. Thomas Halsworthe) and *Richard; and md. (3) MARGERY, b. abt 1544 and bur. 13 Jan 1584/5 at Frittenden, Kent, Eng., by whom he had children (Fowle): William, Francis (md. Mrs. Elizabeth Whitfield), John, Marian (md. Peter Payne), Thomas, and Clemence (md. William Fitch). Thomas was a clothier and landowner; he was the father of
- *RICHARD FOWLE, chr. 18 Dec 1569 at Frittenden, Kent, Eng. (Refer to Family 7474-7475 for additional details.)

(D24, D25)

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

A. Census Records

- A1. 1787 Census of Virginia; compiled by Nettie Schreiner-Yantis and Florene Speakman Love; 1987; Genealogical Book Co., Baltimore, Md.; 2022 p.
- A2. 1850 Census of Botetourt Co., Va.
- A3. 1810 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A4. 1830 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A5. 1860 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.)
- A6. 1870 Census of Raleigh Co., W. Va.
- A7. 1850 Census of Logan Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A8. 1870 Census of Monroe Co., Va.

- A9. 1850 Census of Raleigh Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A10. 1860 Census of Raleigh Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A11. 1880 Census of Raleigh Co., W. Va.

B. Land, Probate, Tax, and Court Records.

- B1. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B2. Wills and Administrations of the District Court, Sweet Springs, W. Va.
- B3. Montgomery Co., Va., Wills.
- B4. Frederick Co., Va., Taxlists.
- B5. Court Records of the District Court, Sweet Springs, W. Va.
- B6. Botetourt Co., Va., Court Records.
- B7. Botetourt Co., Va., Deeds.
- B8. Deeds of the District Court, Sweet Springs, W. Va.
- B9. Montgomery Co., Va., Deeds.
- B10. Frederick Co., Va., Deeds.
- B11. Frederick Co., Va., Court Order Books.
- B12. Botetourt Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B13. Montgomery Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B14. Jefferson Co., Tenn., Deeds.
- B15. Jefferson Co., Tenn. Wills.
- B16. Monroe Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B17. Monroe Co., W. Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B18. Giles Co., Va., Deeds.
- B19. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Wills.
- B20. Giles Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B21. Monroe Co., W. Va., Court Records.
- B22. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B23. Giles Co., Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B24. Frederick Co., Va., Court Order Books.
- B25. Botetourt Co., Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B26. Berks Co., Pa., Deeds.
- B27. Frederick Co., Md., Deeds.
- B28. Botetourt Co., Va., Wills.
- B29. Berkeley Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B30. Giles Co., Va., Wills.
- B31. Augusta Co., Va., Wills.
- B32. Frederick Co., Va., Mixed Probate Records.
- B33. Philadelphia Co., Pa., Deeds.
- B34. Washington Co., Md., Deeds.

C. Vital, Church, and Cemetery Records.

- C1. Frederick Co., Va., Marriages.
- C2. Botetourt Co., Va., Marriages.
- C3. Composite Lists of Marriage Bonds, Parental Permits, and Minister Returns, Monroe Co., W. Va. (1799-1850); by Aubrey O. Smith (comp.); 1962; Beckley W. Va.
- C4. Montgomery Co., Va., Marriages.
- C5. Jefferson Co., Tenn., Marriages.
- C6. Summers Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C7. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C8. Grandview Cem., Raleigh Co., W. Va.
- C9. Fayette Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C10. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Births.
- C11. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C12. Mercer Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C13. Jefferson Co., Tenn., Tombstone Inscriptions.
- B14. Giles Co., Va., Marriages.

D. Compiled and Miscellaneous Records.

- D1. Adam's Ancestors: Clark-Harvey Genealogy, Vol. 1; by Thomas Nathan Clark; 1981; Napierville, Ill., 296 p.
- D2. Personal Records of Mrs. Hansel Lowe, Blue Springs, Mo.
- D3. Personal Records of Oliver H. Carper, Washington, D.C.
- D4. The Big Sandy Valley; by William Ely; 1887; Central methodist, Catlettsburg, Ky.
- D5. History of Summers County; by James H. Miller.; 1908; Hinton, W. Va.; 838 p.
- D6. Pennsylvania German Pioneers, Vol. 1; by Ralph B. Strassburger; 1934; Norristown, Pa.
- D7. The Carpers of Roane County; by Peggy A. Grubbs, 1985; Gateway Press, Baltimore, Md.; 322 p.
- D8. Ancestral File, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D9. Genealogy of Joseph Peck and Some Related Families; by George Braden Roberts; 1955; Washington, D.C.; 344 p.
- D10. Personal Records of Oliver H. Carper, Washington, D.C.
- D11. Peck Family Descendants of Jacob and Lydia (Borden) Peck; by Jesse William Peck, Sr.; 1958; Clifton Forge, Va.; 100 p.
- D12. East Tennessee Historical Society Publications.
- D13. Personal Records of Aubrey O. Smith, Beckley, W. Va.
- D14. Personal Records of Charles C. Sanner and dau. Mrs. Grace S. Thorpe, Wridley, Calif.
- D15. Gunsmiths of West Virginia; by James B. Whisker; 1987; Old Bedford Village Press, Bedford, Pa.; 128 p.
- D16. Isaac Carper Family Bible, %Mrs. Florence Carper Mullen, Tillie Road, Roanoke, Va. (copied by O. H. Carper on 19 Sep 1945 and included in the Smith-Riffe Collection).
- D17. Smith-Riffe Collection of New River Genealogy and Local History; by Aubrey O. Smith (Comp.) and Winton A. Riffe (Co.-comp.), and John F. Vallentine (Ed.); Microfilmed in 1979 on 17 rolls at the Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D18. Another Famous Rifle-Maker of Raleigh Co.; Register and Post-Herald, Beckley, W. Va.; 7 Jan 1956 issue.
- D19. DAR Patriot Index; by National Society of Daughters of the American Revolution; 1990 (Centennial Ed.); Washington, D.C.
- D20. Peck; by J. A. Kelly; 1933; William and Mary Quarterly, 2nd. Series, 13:273-277.
- D21. History and Wars of Roanoke Co.; by Works Progress Admin. of Virginia; not dated (microfilmed 1953 by the Genealogical Society of Utah, Salt Lake City, Utah).
- D22. Historical Registry of Virginians in the Revolution, 1775-1785; by John H. Gwathmey; 1938; Dietz Press, Richmond, Va.
- D23. Genealogical Research in England: The Borden of Headcorn, Co. Kent; by G. Andrews Moriarty; 1930; New Eng. Hist. & Gen. Reg. 84:70-84, 225-229.
- D24. Genealogical Research in England: Fowle-Borden; by G. Andrews Moriarty; 1921; New Eng. Hist. & Gen. Reg. 75:226-233.
- D25. Family Group Records Archives, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
- D26. Benjamin Borden, Shenandoah Valley Pioneer: Notes on His Ancestry and Descendants; by J. A. Kelly; 1931; William and Mary Quarterly, Second Series, 11:325-329.
- D27. New Jersey Archives, 1st. Series.
- D28. Hopewell Friends History, 1734-1934, Frederick County, Virginia; by John W. Wayland; 1936; Shenandoah Pub. House, Strasburg, Va.; 671 p.
- D29. Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island; by J. O. Austin; 1887; Joel Munsell's Sons, Albany, N. Y.; 440 p.
- D30. Pioneers of Old Monocacy: The Early Settlement of Frederick County, Md., 1721-43; by Grace L. Tracey and John P. Dern; 1987; Genealogical Pub. Co., Baltimore Md.

SHUMATE-LEACH ANCESTRAL LINE

FAMILY 118-119

HARDEN SHUMATE (1783) and ELIZABETH LEACH (1788)

HARDEN SHUMATE, son of Daniel Shumate (1749) and wife Milly (1758), was b. 30 Sep 1783 at Rich Creek, Giles (then Greenbrier Co.), Va.; d. 22 Feb 1874 at Rich Creek; bur. Shumate Cem, later moved to new Rich Creek Cem.; md. 10 June 1806 in Monroe Co., W. Va., to ELIZABETH LEACH. Elizabeth, dau. of William Leach (1740) and wife Susanna Hughes (1744), was b. 28 Dec 1783 in the Sinks, Monroe Co., W. Va.; d. 3 Feb 1873 at Rich Creek; bur. originally in Shumate Cem., later moved to new Rich Creek Cem. Children (Shumate)--all b. Rich Creek:

EDMUND, b. 26 Jan 1807; d. 8 Sep 1852 in Giles Co.; bur. Rich Cr. Cem.; md. 26 Feb 1829 in Giles Co. to JANE McCLAUGHERTY. Jane, dau. of James McClaugherty, Jr., and wife Sarah Mullins, was b. 21 Mar 1810 in Giles Co.; d. 15 Nov 1896; bur. Wilmington, Wabaunsee, Kan. (Note: James McClaugherty, Jr., and family were residing by 1816 on New River about 3 1/2 miles below Glen Lyn (D20).) Children (Shumate)--b. Giles Co.: William Preston (md. Sarah A. Hare), James Harding (md. Mary M. Swope), Sarah E. (md. Mr. Jones), Lewis A., Ballard M. (md. Margaret Peters), Mary J. (md. R. A. Reaburn), Susan Ann (md. Mr. Pully), Edmund L. (md. Martha L. Peters), John D., and Alice Grey (md. (1) Lewis Adelbert Shumate, md. (2) John W. Musick).

Edmund lived on New River in Giles Co. near Glen Lyn. After raising his family, he reportedly "went West." If so, he later returned to Giles Co. In his will dated 6 Sep 1852, Edmund Shumate of Giles Co. left a life right in his 200-acre farm to his wife Jane (B6, 3:237). Provision was made for his children, many of whom were minors. He appointed as executors his oldest sons William Preston and James Harding along with James McClaugherty, Jr., the latter being his father-in-law.

- *JANE (JENNIE), b. 17 Dec 1809; d. 18 Dec 1891 in Raleigh Co., W. Va.; bur. Grandview Cem, Raleigh Co.; md. 6 Sep 1824 in Monroe Co. to JOSEPH CARPER. (Refer to Family 58-59 for further details.)
- SUSAN MORAN, b. 17 Mar 1811; d. 22 May 1848 prob. in Mercer Co., W. Va.; bur. Rich Cr. Cem.; md. 17 Mar 1840 to LORENZO DOUTHAT MARTIN. Lorenzo D., son of John Martin and wife Susannah Waggoner, was b. 14 Nov 1814 in Giles Co.; d. 15 Feb 1888 near Athens, Mercer, W. Va.; bur. Bolen Cem., near Pettry, Mercer, W. Va.; md. (1) Susan Moran Shumate, md. (2) 11 Apr 1849 to Sarah Pack. Children by Susan M. (Shumate)--b. Mercer Co.: Cynthia J. (md. William K. Martin) and Isabella (md. Mr. Pettry). Lorenzo D. Martin was a farmer of Mercer Co.
- GEORGE WASHINGTON, b. 25 Mar 1813; d. 24 Apr 1855 in Iowa; md. ANNA MARTIN, b. 1819 prob. in Mercer Co., W. Va., dau. of John Martin and wife Susanna Waggoner. Children (Shumate)--prob. all b. Mercer Co.: John H., James H., Virginia, Elizabeth, Allen, Washington, and Harden. Washington reportedly took his family to California during the gold rush in 1848 and bought a farm in the Yosemite Valley but died in Iowa while returning to West Virginia (D5, D11).
- CINTHA, b. 5 Sep 1815; d. 24 Aug 1898 (also given as 18 Oct 1898) in Monroe Co.; bur. Dunn Cem., near Peterstown, Monroe, Va.; md. 13 Sep 1832 in Giles Co. to MADISON DUNN. Madison, son of Thomas Dunn, was b. 8 Dec 1808 in Monroe Co.; d. 18 Apr 1859 in Monroe Co.; bur. Dunn Cem. Children (Dunn)--all b. Monroe Co.: Lewis

(md. Alice G.), William, John Harvey (md. Sarah L.), Rufus K., Daniel, Edmund Squire (md. Martha J. Baber), Harden S. (md. Clementine V. Ballard), Elizabeth, Sarah, and James. This family resided in Red Sulphur Twp., Monroe Co., where Madison was a farmer.

- HESTER ANN, b. 4 Oct 1817; d. 16 Aug 1886 near Athens, Mercer, W. Va.; bur. near Athens; md. 27 Mar 1837 in Giles Co. to DAVID MARTIN. David, son of John Martin and wife Susanna Waggoner, was b. 3 Feb 1804 in Giles Co.; d. 18 Dec 1888 near Athens; bur. near Athens. Children (Martin)--b. Mercer Co., W. Va.: Elisabeth S. (md. John J. Wright), Nancy Jane (md. Andrew Jackson Fanning), Hardin K. (md. Angeline C. Kirtner), John Martin, Daniel B., Levi V. (md. Louisa Frances Kirtner), William F. (md. Mary E. Oxley), Hester Ann (md. Ruben G. Blankenship), James J. (md. Ella Caroline Bennett), Sarah Louise K. (md. John A. Gore), Cynthia Mary J. (md. George W. Keatley). George W. (md. Hannah Irene Bird), and Lewis Allan (md. Susan Kathryn Hunt). David Martin was a farmer and resided on Laurel Creek near Athens.
- KENDLEY, b. 30 Apr 1820; d. 18 May 1915 at Pearisburg, Giles, Va.; bur. Rich Cr. Cem.; md. 19 Feb 1844 in Monroe Co. to MARGARET M. SYMMS. Margaret M., dau. of John Symms, was b. 15 Oct 1822; d. 24 July 1898 prob. in Giles Co.; bur. Rich Cr. Cem. Children (Shumate)--b. Giles Co.: Catherine E. (md. Fred H. Hobbs), Lewis Adelbert (md. Alice Grey Shumate), Charles, John S. (md. Sarah F. Pugh), William, Mary J., Luther (md. Linnie S. Jones), Cynthia E. (md. L. C. Wolfe), and Andrew J.

Kendley was a farmer and spent his entire life in the Rich Creek vicinity. In 1873 a disastrous small pox epidemic struck the Kendley Shumate family. Coming back from the West for a visit, Kendley's daughter Catherine Hobbs and his son Lewis A. Shumate unknowingly brought the disease back with them. As a result four of Kendley's children--Catherine, Lewis, John, and Mary--died along with one daughter-in-law (John's wife Sarah) and two grand children.

- DANIEL, b. 17 July 1822; d. 22 Sep 1922 near Bethany, Harrison, Mo.; bur. near Bethany; md. 17 Aug 1846 in Monroe Co. to CYNTHIA MERCER PETERS. Cynthia, dau. of Conrad Lewis Peters and wife Clara Snidow, was b. 7 Aug 1828 at Peterstown, Monroe, W. Va.; d. 3 Jan 1905 at Forest City, Holt, Mo.; bur. near Bethany. Children (Shumate)--b. near Peterstown: Christopher Lewis (md. Amanda M. Morgan) and Elizabeth J. (md. Eldorado Bolin). Daniel moved with his family to near Bethany in Harrison Co., Mo., in 1852.
- WILLIAM, b. 29 Sep 1824; d. 30 June 1888; md. 15 May 1850 in Giles Co. to MARTHA S. HALE, b. 29 Feb 1832, dau. of Thomas T. Hale. Children (Shumate): William Henry, Edmond Leach, Sarah Elizabeth (md. Samuel Cooper), Mary Josephine (md. America Morgan), Cynthia Ann, Daniel Hale, Emma Virginia, Laura Dunn, Walter, Susie, and Pauline. William lived near Sampsel, Livingston, Mo.
- ELIZABETH, b. 30 Nov 1825; d. 4/5 May 1833 in Giles Co.; bur. Rich Creek Cem.
- HARDIN, JR., b. 19 Sep 1828; d. 19 Jan 1865 at Pearisburg, Giles, Va.; bur. Rich Cr. Cem.; md. SARAH J. ISABELL BROWN. Sarah J., dau. of Col. George W. Brown, was b. 12 Dec 1828; d. 2 June 1911; bur. Rich Cr. Cem. Children (Shumate)--b. Giles Co.: George William (md. Nannie J.), Mary Ann (md. Hugh T. Adair), Fanny B., Ellen C., Martha Lula (md. Thomas M. Gwinn), and Miriam E. Hardin lived and raised his family near Rich Creek. While serving as a soldier of the Confederacy, he was seriously injured. He died in an army hospital at Pearisburg after the second amputation of his injured leg. His widow Sarah was the principal heir by will of his father Harden, Sr.

Hardin Shumate lived his entire life in the Rich Creek vicinity of present-day Giles Co., Va. He began paying personal property taxes in then Monroe Co. in the year of his marriage, 1806 (B7) and continued through 1818. He was recorded as a lieutenant in Capt. Peters Co. of the Monroe Co. Militia on 15 Dec 1812 (B5). His being listed in Giles Co. in 1820 (A8) and paying personal property taxes in Giles Co. in 1822 (B24) shows that he was then residing somewhere south of Rich Creek and further up New River possibly in the vicinity of the Narrows. However, he had apparently returned to Rich Creek by 1826 when he was devised by his father Daniel the latter's home place (excluding the portion devised to Tollison Shumate) (B22, 2:368).

Harden Shumate bought and sold several tracts of land located in Giles Co. over the years. These consisted of the following:

- (a) Purchased on 1 Sep 1821 in a composite conveyance from Christian and James Mullins of Giles Co. in which Harden Shumate, Larkin Tuggle, and Tollison Shumate each received tracts of 50 acres located on East River (B11, B:329).
- (c) Devised on 7 July 1826 by will of his father the major portion of his father's home place described as being on Rich Creek and New River (B22, 2:368).
- (d) Received on 14 Apr 1832 an encumbrance against 100 a. on New River below the big falls at the Narrows in a trust deed given by Jesse Foster to John McClaugherty, Jr. (trustee); this was to cover an indebtedness of \$55 to Harden; witnesses were Joseph Carper, Abraham Peters, and Washington Shumate (B11).
- (e) Purchased on 29 July 1833 various Neeley lands from William Alvis and wife Polly and Elizabeth Neely: (1) 180 a. on the east side of New River (a survey to James Neeley), (2) 33 a. on East River under the East River Mtn., (3) half of 414 a., and (4) half of 40 a. (B11, D:314).
- (f) Conveyed on 20 Dec 1835 four tracts totaling 420 a. (as above in D:314) to Edmund Shumate of Giles Co. for \$108, said lands being located on New River and its waters (B11, D:675); said lands had been taken by Harden and sold at public auction to Edmund Shumate (his son).
- (g) Purchased on 4 May 1838 from Gabriel Maupin and wife Mary of Giles Co. for \$30 a tract of 100 a. located on the east side of New River below the big falls at the Narrows (B11, E:347). This land was further described as being above the land where Harden then lived as well as adjoining lands of Thomas Hobbs; the conveyance was witnessed by Thomas J. George, Samuel P. Pearis, and Kendly Shumate.
- (h) Bought on 1 Sep 1840 of John McClaugherty, Jr., and wife Phebe of Mercer Co. a total of 370 a. on the waters of Rich Creek and New River and located near lands of Rollison and said Harden Shumate near the southwest end of Peterstown (B11, F:206). These were the same lands conveyed by Tolison and Harden Shumate from the estate of Daniel Shumate (Sr.) on 10 Feb 1830 to said John McClaugherty; lands conveyed consisted of three adjoining tracts: (1) 140 a. surveyed to Daniel Shumate on 28 Sep 1797, (3) part of two surveys of 186 a. and 140 a. granted to Daniel Shumate on 24 June 1790, and (3) 97 a. granted to Daniel Shumate on 27 May 1803.
- (i) Gifted on 26 Apr 1842 to his son Kenly Shumate (both parties of Giles Co.) a tract of 200 a. out of the above 370 a. (B11, F:206).
- (b) Received on 31 Aug 1843 a land grant of 100 a. on the east side of New River (B34).
- (j) Gifted on 17 Oct 1843 to his son Daniel Shumate a tract of 80 a., this comprised of portions of his home survey and of the tract purchased of John McClaugherty, Jr., being located about one mile from Peterstown on the east side of the public road leading from

- Peterstown to Giles Court House (B11, G:30). (Note: said tract was sold by Daniel (Jr.) to Harden Shumate, Jr., on 13 Mar 1855 (B11, G:458).)
- (k) Gifted on 14 Apr 1847 to his son William a tract of 100 a. in Giles Co. on the east side of New River adjoining lands of Thomas J. Hobbs and Harden's "300-acre" tract (B11, G:377). (Note: said land was sold by William on 13 Mar 1855 to Harden Shumate, Jr. (B11, G:458).)
 - (l) Bought on 29 Nov 1848 from Thomas Hobbs and wife Julina (all parties of Giles Co.) for \$200 the following two adjoining tracts: (1) 100 a. adjoining said Shumate's 186-acre and 300-acre tracts and lands of said Hobbs and (2) part of 19 a. patented on 31 Aug 1844 to said Hobbs and located on New River adjoining the Rock House (B11, G:461).
 - (m) Sold on 29 Nov 1848 by Hardin and wife Elizabeth to Thomas J. Hobbs (all parties of Giles Co.) a tract of 100 a. on the northeast side of New River below Wolf Creek Falls in New River known as the Maupin Place (having previously been bought by Harden of Gabriel Maupin and wife Polly) (B11, K:168).
 - (n) Sold on 2 Jan 1869 by Hardin and wife Elizabeth to Kendly Shumate a tract of 45 a. on Rich Creek near Peterstown adjoining lands of George Spangler, James Dunn, and K. Shumate, and known as the east end of the "old McClaugherty survey" (B11, L:452).
 - (o) Devised in his will dated 16 Apr 1873 to his daughter-in-law Sarah J. Shumate, widow of son Harden, Jr., a life right in all of his remaining lands and then to her children by said Harden, Jr. (B6, 5:29).

Harden and his family lived on the old Shumate home place inherited from his father, in which home his mother Milly also spent the remainder of her life.

Will of Hardin Shumate

"I, Hardin Shumate of the County of Giles and State of Virginia being of sound mind but feeble in health, do make this my last will and testament hereby revoking all others.

And first I resign my body to the dust from whence it came, and my spirit to the God who gave it.

2nd. I will and bequeath that after my decease my body be decently interred and all my funeral expenses paid.

3rd. I will and bequeath to my daughter-in-law Sarah J. Shumate (wife of my son Hardin Shumate, dead) all my lands lying and being in Giles County, Va., during her widowhood or natural life, then to go to her children by my son Hardin. She is not to sell her lifetime dower in same. In case she marries her right to control the land shall cease, nor shall her husband have any control of it whatever, but it shall go directly to her children by my son Hardin as above directed; but in any case she shall have a decent support as she now has while she remains upon it.

4th. It is expressly understood that none of my other children, either male or female, has any interest whatever in my estate, they all having received long since their full share of my estate.

5th. I have a bedstead and furniture still in my house which I also will and bequeath to my daughter-in-law Sarah J. Shumate and her children.

6th. I have understood from good authority that my son Kendley Shumate intends bringing in against my estate an account for keeping my wife (his mother). If such account should come against my estate for keeping my wife Elizabeth, at any time I do hereby will and bequeath that said amount shall not be paid, he having been amply paid for keeping her in beds, bed clothes, sheets, and table cloths of which my wife took with her when she left my house.

7th. I hereby appoint George M. Peck my executor to carry out and attend to the provisions of this will.

Witness my hand and seal this 16 day of April 1873,

Hardin Shumate (seal)

Witnesses: Rufus N. Hale
Paul C. Smith
James A. Meadows

VIRGINIA, IN GILES COUNTY COURT March 17th, 1874.

This last will and testament of Hardin Shumate deceased was this day presented in court and proven by the testimony on oath of Rufus N. Hale and Paul C. Smith, two of the subscribing witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded. Teste

George W. Easley, clerk."

(This will was probated in the Giles County Court on the 17th of March 1874, and the same now appears on record in the Circuit Court Clerk's Office of said County in Will Book 5, pages 29-30.)

(A1, A3, A8, A8, A10, A11, A12, B5, B6, B7, B22, B24, B33, B34, C2, C3, C10, C12, C13, C14, D2, D4, D5, D8, D11, D16, D20, D21, D23, D24, D25, D26)

FAMILY 236-237

DANIEL SHUMATE (1749) and MILLY (1758)

DANIEL SHUMATE, grandson or great grandson of Jean dela Shumate or Chaumette (1665) and wife Elizabeth (Bourgeois) Bouvet (1670), was b. 14 June 1749 in Fauquier (then Prince William) Co., Va.; d. 19 July 1826 in Giles (then Monroe) Co., Va.; bur. Shumate Cem., Rich Cr. (later moved to Rich Cr. Cem.); md. about 1774 probably in Rockbridge or Bedford Co., Va., to MILLY. Milly, reportedly dau. of (Rev.) Isaac Callison, was b. 5 Oct 1758 probably in Va.; d. 11 Sep 1841 (also given as 22 May 1841) at Rich Creek; bur. Shumate Cem., Rich Creek (later moved to Rich Cr. Cem.). Children (Shumate)--oldest three b. in Bedford Co., Va., remainder in now Giles Co., Va.:

TOLLISON, b. 27 Feb 1775; d. 6 May 1860 in Giles Co.; bur. Rich Creek Cem.; md. (1) 12 Jan 1798 in Monroe Co., W. Va., to ELIZABETH BURDETTE. Elizabeth, dau. of William Burdette and wife Sarah Cornwell, was b. 17 Oct 1780 in Virginia; d. 5 Aug 1812 (also given as 8 May 1812) in Giles Co.; bur. Rich Creek Cem. Children (Shumate)--b. Rich Creek: Sarah (Sally) (md. John Williams), Margaret (Peggy) (md. William Lilly), Parkison (md. Rhoda Robinson), Mary (Polly) (md. Anthony Meadows), Milly (md. James Garton), Nancy (md. Richard Williams), and Anderson (md. Sarah Gregory Robinson).

Tollison md. (2) 12 Aug 1813 in Monroe Co. to NANCY GREEN. Nancy, dau. of Jesse Green and wife Clara, was b. 22 Jan 1792; d. 27 Apr 1822 in Giles Co.; bur. Rich Creek Cem. Children (Shumate)--b. at Rich Creek: Green, Thompson, Clara (md. Christopher Calloway), Elizabeth (md. Jackson Burdette), Wilson (md. Elizabeth Campbell), Juliann (md. (1) Isaac Blankenship, (2) Floyd Spangler), and Harrison (md. Nancy Barton Meadows).

Tollison resided on land at the mouth of Rich Creek near his father. He also received 15 acres on the south side of Rich creek in 1826 by will of his father. In 1810 he along with his father Daniel, Sr., and brothers Daniel, John, and Silas were recorded as heads of household in the 1810 Census of Monroe Co. (A1), which then included the Rich Creek area east of New River. Tollison was made a lieutenant in the Monroe Co. Militia in 1799 (B5).

Tollison was a farmer and remained in the Rich Creek vicinity. In his will dated 1 Mar 1857 and recorded 20 May 1860 in Giles Co. (B6, Cir.:4), Tollison Shumate named many of his children and appointed George H. Peck his executor. All of his children and their birth dates were recorded in the Tollison Shumate family Bible (C9).

SILAS, b. 1778; d. after 1860 in Lawrence Co., Ohio; prob. bur. Myrtle Tree Cem., Arabia, Lawrence, Ohio; md. 22 Feb 1802 in Monroe Co. to SARAH CORNWELL, b. 1788 in Virginia, dau. of Elijah Cornwell. Children (Shumate)--first four b. in Monroe Co., remainder in Lawrence Co.: Elijah (md. (1) Celia McDaniel, (2) Clarissa Heisel), Daniel (md. Jane Vanarsdall), John (md. Agnes Lewis), Alexander (md. Elizabeth Massie), Mary Margaret (md. Alexander McDaniel), Elizabeth (Betsey) (md. Ephraim McDaniel), and Ursula (md. William S. Massey).

Silas was listed in the personal property taxlists of Monroe Co. from 1803 to 1812, after which he moved to Lawrence Co., Ohio. Here he was a farmer in Mason Twp., still owning tracts of 44 a. and 84 a. in 1853 (B8). The following year on 14 Aug 1854 he and wife Sarah sold both tracts to William S. Massie (their son-in-law) for his providing maintenance and support for them during the remainder of their natural lives (B9, 15:548). Silas and wife Sarah were recorded residing in the household of their daughter Ursula Massie and husband William S. in Mason Twp. in 1860 (A2).

ELIZABETH (BETSY), b. abt 1780; d. 1840-1850 in Lawrence Co., Ohio; bur. Myrtle Tree Cem., Arabia, Lawrence, Ohio; md. (1) 14 Oct 1800 in Monroe Co. to JACOB PETERS, possibly Jacob, Jr., son of Jacob Peters, Sr.. Children by Jacob Peters, if any, are unknown. Elizabeth md. (2) (bond) 24 Feb 1803 in Monroe Co. to URIAH VERMILLION. Uriah was b. 4 Oct 1761 in Prince George's Co., Md.; d. 1840-1850 in Lawrence Co.; md. (1) Susan Baker and (2) Elizabeth Shumate. Elizabeth's children by Uriah (Vermillion)--oldest children b. in Monroe Co., W. Va., youngest in Lawrence Co., Ohio: Daniel Shumate (md. Priscilla Hutchinson), Jesse (md. Catherine Justice), Nicodemus, David (md. Elizabeth Massey), Lawrence, Lucy (md. David Lee), Harriet (md. Joseph Darling), and Uriah (md. Nancy Cron) (D27). Uriah Vermillion paid taxes in Gallia Co., Ohio, in 1813, residing in what was Lawrence Co. beginning in 1815 (B30). Uriah was listed as a head of household in Mason Twp., Lawrence Co., in the censuses of 1820, 1830, and 1840 (A14, A15, A16) but not in 1850 (A6).

JOHN, b. 1781; d. 1837 in Madison Twp., Jackson Co., Ohio; md. (1) (bond) 22 May 1807 in Monroe Co. to SARAH MILBURN, b. abt 1785 and d. 19 Apr 1808 in Scioto Co., Ohio, dau. of Nathan Milbourne and wife Sally. Daughter Sarah b. and d. 1808 in Scioto Co. John md. (2) 25 Aug 1808 in Greenbrier Co., W. Va., to SARAH WOLFENBERGER,

b. abt 1784, dau. of John Wolfensberger and wife Catherine; Sarah reportedly d. late 1812 in Jackson Co., Ohio (D1). Children by second marriage (Shumate)--b. Ohio: Green (md. Elizabeth Rose) and Mary (md. John S. Stephenson) and possibly others. John may have married (3) 12 Sep 1814 in Greenbrier Co. to RACHEL GIBSON; he md. lastly (4) to SARAH (SALLY), b. 1782 in Virginia, who remarried after John's death to John Horton on 4 Oct 1840 in Jackson Co., Ohio. Children by last marriage (or possibly from a previous marriage also)--b. Jackson Co.: Harrison (md. Sabina Buckley), Sintha (md. Joseph McCollister), Jane (md. Woodford Loyd), Parkison (md. Abigail), Sarah L. (md. Peyton Loyd), and Nancy (md. Charles Reed).

Shortly after his first marriage John moved to Scioto Co., Ohio. Here, both his first wife and first child died the following year. On 29 May 1808 he sold his tract of land in Scioto Co. to John J. James and returned to West Virginia (D1). John paid personal property taxes in Monroe Co. from 1809 to 1811. He then returned to Ohio and paid taxes in Gallia Co. in 1812; when taxed in 1813 in Gallia Co., he was residing in the household of Uriah Vermillion, his brother-in-law (B30).

Family tradition has it that his second wife Sarah nee Wolfensberger died in late 1812 after giving birth to at least one child; if so, her death presumably would have occurred in Gallia Co. The tradition continues that John (1781) was the John Shumate that married Rachel Gibson in Greenbrier Co. on 12 Sep 1814 (D1). If true--and this seems doubtful, then she had died prior to 1826, since John's spouse from 1826 and at the time of his death in 1837 was named Sarah not Rachel. No marriage record of John to a Sarah after 1815 has been found recorded in any associated county in Ohio or West Virginia; and since his last wife Sarah was about his same age, the question arises as to whether family tradition may have been in error and his wife Sarah nee Wolfensberger may have been both his second and his last wife.

When recorded in the 1820 census, John was residing in Madison Twp., Jackson Co., Ohio (A9); this became his permanent home, and here he was a landowner and farmer. John was also recorded in Oct 1833 as having been a judge of the Jackson County Court since 23 Oct 1829 (B29, C:116). He bought and sold various tracts of land in Jackson Co. between 1826 and 1836 (B10, A:358, 493, B:42, 542, 576). From 1832 through 1838 he paid taxes on tracts of 42 and 169 a. in Madison Twp. (B31).

John's death occurred prior to 4 Mar 1837 when John Stephenson was shown as administrator of his estate--possibly then being issued letters of administration (B32, indexed to case file #140, unavailable). On 30 Mar 1839 Sarah Shumate, his widow, brought suit against John S. Stephenson et al. to settle John's estate (B29, D:306). As part of this court case, on 24 July 1839 Jacob Westfall was appointed guardian of the infant heirs of John Shumate (B29, D:321), the heirs being unnamed but apparently including Nancy and Sintha and possibly Parkison. As the petitioner in the court case of Sarah Shumate vs. John Stephenson et al., Sarah was endowed with a dower interest of one third of the lands in Daniel's estate, and on 25 July 1839 said dower land was ordered set off to her (B29, D:322).

The interests of several of the heirs to John's estate lands were conveyed in 1841 and 1842 to one James M. Cole (B10, G:136-138). Heirs and grantors conveying their interests--whether this left

out interests of other heirs is uncertain--by separate deeds were as follows: (1) Parkison Shumate and wife Abigail, (2) Woodford Loyd and wife Jane, (3) James Reed and wife Jane, (4) John Horton and wife Sarah, "former widow of John Shumate, deceased," and (5) John S. Stephenson and wife Mary. All deeds were recorded in 1844, around which time Cole sold the rights he had thus obtained. The lands involved were (1) 169 a. being NW1/4, Sec. 19 (T7 R17), (2) 42 a. being NW1/4SW1/4, Sec. 19 (T7 R17), and (3) 15 a. off the west side of SW1/4NW1/4, Sec. 19 (T7 R17).

John and Sarah Horton, both aged 62 years and born in Virginia, were recorded in the same household in the 1850 census of Jefferson Twp., Jackson, Ohio (A5). John Horton, a farmer, died 6 June 1869 in Jefferson Twp., aged 83y 2m 12d (C17); his burial along side his first wife Mary was in the Horton Cem., Jefferson Twp. (C18). Sarah (Shumate) Horton was presumably buried beside her former husband John Shumate, but the location of their graves, presumably in Jackson Co., is unknown.

DANIEL (JR.), b. 1782-3; d. 20 May 1854 in Raleigh Co., W. Va.; md. (bond) 29 July 1802 in Monroe Co. to ELIZABETH ELLISON, b. abt 1782 on New River, now Summers, W. Va., dau. of James Ellison and wife Nancy Elizabeth Farley. Children (Shumate)--older children b. in Monroe Co., younger children in Raleigh Co.: Ruth (md. Pemberton Cook), Nancy (md. James Moore), James, Mary (md. Jesse O'Neal), John (md. Sarah Harper), Amos (md. (1) Mary Phillips, (2) Rhody Dare, (3) Miss Cazort, (4) Nancy Hill Toliver), Tollison (md. Nancy Massey), Elizabeth (md. Allen Morris), Newton (md. Nancy Partheny Hutchinson), and Daniel (md. Narcissa Burgess).

Daniel was recorded as a head of household in Monroe Co. in 1810, his family then including four children (A1). Shortly afterwards he moved to now Raleigh Co., W. Va.; after living briefly at the mouth of Shumate Creek near Edwight, he bought 250 a. on the Marsh Branch of Coal River and moved there. On 30 Apr 1823 Daniel Shumate gave a trust deed to the 250 a. "where Daniel now lives" (B11, C:30); the trust deed was issued to Joseph McDonald to secure indebtedness to Stephen McDonald. This tract had been purchased from John Cook, Jr., and wife Jane on 31 Dec 1819 for \$500 but title was not conveyed until 29 Aug 1831 (B35). This became the permanent home of Daniel; it was located in Giles Co. until 1824, in Logan Co. until 1831, and in Fayette Co. until the creation of Raleigh Co. in 1850.

In the early 1830's Daniel was a blacksmith as well as farmer and was a member of the Coal Marsh Baptist Church. His son Daniel Jr. was the first clerk of the Raleigh County Court (D4).

*HARDEN, b. 30 Sep 1783; d. 22 Feb 1874 at Rich Creek, Giles, Va.; md. 10 June 1806 in Monroe Co. to ELIZABETH LEACH. (See Family 118-119 for further details.)

NANCY, b. 1788; d. 1886 about 98 years old; md. (bond) 2 Dec 1805 in Monroe Co. to ISHAM BURDETTE. Isham, son of William Burdette and wife Sarah Cornwell, was b. 1788 prob. in Monroe Co.; d. Apr 1863 in Monroe Co. Children (Burdette)--most or all b. in Monroe Co.: Jane, Caroline, Mary, Abner, Granville, Nancy J., Julia A., James H., Andrew J., Elizabeth S., Joseph H., and Lewis A. This family resided in Monroe Co. in 1850 (A3).

POLLY, b. 26 Aug 1790; d. 24 Feb 1878 in Walnut Twp., Gallia, Ohio; bur. Sandfork Bapt. Cem., Walnut Twp.; md. 24 Aug 1812 in Monroe Co. to John McDaniel. John, son of Henry McDaniel, Jr., and wife Hannah Bryan, was b. 28 May 1789 in then Greenbrier Co., Va. (W. Va.); d. 2 Dec 1851 in Walnut Twp.; bur. Sandfork Bapt. Cem.. Children (McDaniel)--first three b. in Monroe Co., last three in Gallia

Co., Ohio: Friend (md. Margaret (Peggy), Wiseman), Clara (md. John Lewis Armstrong), Foster (never married), Elizabeth (Betty) (md. Charles Neal), Sarah (md. John McDonald), and Franklin (md. (1) Lucinda Armstrong, (2) Sarah Stewart White, (3) Melissa Wray) (D28).

John's father Henry McDaniel, Jr., moved to Gallia Co. in 1810, and John and Polly and three children followed in 1815 and settled in Walnut Twp., Gallia Co. (D28). John and Polly and several of their family were recorded in the 1850 Census of Gallia Co. in Walnut Twp. (A13); he was a farmer, and he and Polly were members of the Sandfork Baptist Church (D28). Polly was left a legacy by her father's will dated 7 July 1826 (B22, 2:368). Polly's husband John McDaniel of Ohio, according to probate court records dated 26 Jan 1828, had received a settlement out of Daniel Shumate's estate (B33, #256). (Note: on 16 Aug 1812 Daniel Shumate signed a consent for John McDaniel to get a marriage license for himself and "my daughter Polly" with Housten Shumate and Ephraim Dunbar witnessing the consent (C2).)

RACHEL, b. abt 1793; md. (bond) 4 Jan 1820 in Monroe Co. to JOHN McDANIEL. (Note: Tolison Shumate and Daniel Shumate [or Tolison for Daniel Shumate] signed a consent note for obtaining the license; Larkin Tuggle both witnessed the consent note and was a surety on the marriage bond.) Nothing is known about Rachel's children. Rachel and her sister Polly married different men of the same name, but the two John McDaniels may or may not have been related. Little is known of Rachel's husband John McDaniel, but he may have been a son of Thomas McDaniel (sometimes McDonald) of Monroe and later Giles Co., with whom he seems to have been associated in the personal property taxlists.

Rachel was left a legacy by her father in his will (B22, 2:368); and she and her husband were recorded residing in Giles Co. in 1826 when they joined other heirs in giving a power of attorney to sell off property in her father Daniel Shumate's estate (B11, C:633). In a court record dated 26 Jan 1828 it was recorded that John McDaniel of Giles Co. had received a distribution from the estate of Daniel Shumate, deceased (B33, #256).

MARGARET (PEGGY), b. 29 June 1794; d. 13 July 1865 in Mercer Co., W. Va.; md. 15 July 1813 in Monroe Co. to JOHN STODGHILL CAPERTON. John S., son of Hugh Caperton and wife Rhoda Stodghill, was b. 30 Mar 1788 in then Greenbrier Co., W. Va.; d. 31 Mar 1865 in Mercer Co. Children (Caperton)--b. Elgood, Mercer, Va.: Adam Hardin (md. Cynthia Dare), Rhoda (md. William M. French), Lewis Alexander (md. Susan Wiley), Mary Elizabeth (md. James A. Broyles), Thompson H. (md. Sarah), John Stodghill, Jr. (md. Minerva Ann Reid), Overton Harrison (md. Martha Helena Reid), Malinda (md. John Noble), Nancy Green (md. John Coulter), Daniel S., Hugh T., and Julia Ann (md. (1) Louden B. Williams, (2) William Henry Hancock). This family lived firstly in Giles (then Monroe) Co. and then Mercer Co., W. Va.

RHODA, b. 21 Mar 1797; d. 17 Apr 1845; md. in Monroe Co. on 18 Mar 1819 to ARCHIBALD BURDETTE. Archibald, son of William Burdette and wife Sarah Cornwell, was b. 11 Mar 1798 in Monroe Co.; d. 14 Jan 1860. Children (Burdette): Rufus, Claudes, Caroline, Mary, Martha, John, Nancy, Elizabeth, Preston, Lewis, William, Daniel, and Albert.

MALINDA, b. 3 Oct 1799; d. 3 Sep 1877 in Monroe Co.; md. 21 Sep 1815 to LARKIN TUGGLE. Larkin, son of Henry Tuggle and wife Celia, was b. 11 Mar 1790 in Berkeley Co. W. Va.; d. 1 Sep 1870 in Monroe Co. Children (Tuggle)--all b. Monroe Co.: Mary (Polly) (md. (1) Abraham Ellison, (2) William Crawford), John (md. (1) Emily

Fleshman, (2) Lucinda Bailey), Celia (md. John Coalter), Amelia (md. Abraham L. Keadle), Larkin (Jr.) (md. Isabella K. Coalter), Caroline (md. Powhatan Baber), Lewis (md. Mary Emily Roach), Elizabeth (md. Christopher Snidow Peck), and Malinda Jane (md. (1) Josephus Duncan, (2) George W. Rice).

The Tuggle family resided along the Valley of Peters Mountain in Monroe Co.; in 1853 Larkin Tuggle paid taxes on four tracts totaling 265 a. (B12). In his will dated 1 May 1867 and probated 19 Oct 1870 in Monroe Co. (B22, 9:284), legacies were left to his wife, to his dau. Mrs. Duncan, to the heirs of Larkin, Jr., and his grandson Charles L. Ellison. The remainder of his estate was ordered divided amongst all of his heirs, and he appointed John Tuggle and B. B. Baber as executors.

The parentage of Daniel Shumate (1749), the original Shumate settler on Rich Creek in present-day Giles Co., Va., remains undocumented and unproven; but that he was born in Fauquier Co., Va., and was a descendant--either grandson or great grandson--of Jean dela Shumate (1665) seems certain. (Refer to Family XXX-XXX for further details.) Daniel's birth date of 14 June 1749 apparently came from family records; this date was first submitted and accepted by DAR many years ago (D9). The full birth date was probably taken from a family Bible. It is reported that son Edmund took the Daniel Shumate Bible with him when he went west, but its existence is now unknown (D8). Daniel's birth year of 1749 (no month or day) is recorded in a Burdette family Bible (D6).

Other authors have questioned the 1749 year of birth for Daniel of Rich Creek and have proposed alternative years of birth, none based on documentation: 1751, (D12, D10), 1755 (D2), and "14 June probably 1759" (D1). A bronze plaque on granite placed in the Rich Creek Cem. in recent years (D10) reads as follows: "Daniel Shumate (1751-1826), Millie C. Shumate (1758-1841)" (D10). In contrast to that of her husband Daniel, Milly's birth date of 5 Oct 1758 has apparently never been questioned. Yet, it seems probable that both birth dates were recorded in the same source, this still unknown but probably the family Bible.

Juggling the birth year of Daniel of Rich Creek has often accompanied questioning whether the Revolutionary War service of one Daniel Shumate from Fauquier Co. pertained to him or to some other Daniel. "There has been some question as to whether it was the Daniel Shumate who settled at Rich Creek or his father Daniel" who was the soldier from Fauquier Co. (D12, p. 344, article by Haskell D. Shumate), the latter being in reference to Daniel (1734), a candidate for father of Daniel (1749). One Daniel Shumate did take the oath as ensign in the Fauquier Co. Militia in August 1777; he was recorded as a 2nd. lieut. on 24 March 1778, took an oath on November 1779, but resigned his commission in May 1781 (D7, p. 711). Based on this Fauquier Co. militia service many descendants of Daniel of Rich Creek have joined DAR (D9) and other Revolutionary War patriotic organizations such as SAR.

Von Stauffenberg (D1) found "conclusive evidence" against Daniel of Rich Creek being the Fauquier Co. militiaman in that (1) he "did not wait" until 31 years of age to marry and (2) neither he nor his widow Milly ever applied for a Revolutionary War pension. Thus, he concluded that the Revolutionary soldier from Fauquier Co. was instead Daniel (1734-1806; wife Sarah Ann) and the father of Daniel Shumate of Rich Creek. Now comes Riley (D2), who assigned the Fauquier Co. service record to Daniel Shumate (d. 1784, husband of Tabitha Dodson), whom he concluded to be the son of Daniel Shumate (1714) of John (1665).

Whether Daniel of Rich Creek could or could not wait until 31 years of age to marry Milly cannot be properly entertained at this late date! However,

his failure to apply for a pension can be. The federal pension law of 18 Mar 1818, the first law based on service rather than need, required nine months of service in the continental establishment. Even this brief window of opportunity was closed on 1 May 1820 when proof of need was restored; and it was not until 7 June 1832 that veterans of six months or more of service irrespective of need became eligible. Because of his ownership of land and other property, Daniel of Rich Creek would have died in 1826 before becoming eligible. (Note: while living at Rich Creek Daniel acquired over 1,000 a. of land; he also owned seven slaves at the time of his death.) Milly might have been eligible for a pension after 4 July 1836 since pensions then became available to a widow who had married a qualifying veteran before his last day of service; but there is no evidence she ever applied.

Daniel Shumate had settled in Bedford Co. by 1778. On 28 Sep 1778 Daniel Shomake of Bedford Co. bought of Moses Rentfro, also of Bedford Co., for L200 a tract of 296 a. on the north fork of Blackwater River, being part of an original 396-acre survey (B13, 6:107). This same tract of 296 acres, now located in Franklin Co., was sold 29 Aug 1785 by Daniel Shumate of Greenbrier Co. for L300 to Jacob Miller of Bedford Co. (B14, 1:30). Witnesses on the latter conveyance were Jacob Wimmer, Philip Lybrook, and Jacob (surname illegible). The name of Daniel Shumate also appears on a list of names dated 22 May 1779 petitioning for a division of the county of Bedford (D11). The Greenbrier residence of Daniel (1749) in 1785 proves he was the Daniel Shumate residing on the North Fork of Blackwater in 1778 and 1779.

Daniel's (1749) service in the Fauquier Co. Militia while residing on the north fork of Blackwater River, located around 175 miles from Elk Run in Fauquier Co. and under primitive road conditions, would seem to be the most definitive factor in casting doubt on him being the militia officer of Fauquier Co. It is possible he served in the Bedford Co. militia, but this is only speculation. Irregardless, Daniel's willingness to serve in military defense roles was demonstrated by his accepting commissions in the Greenbrier Co. Militia. On 22 Mar 1783 the Greenbrier Court appointed Andrew Woods as captain of militia and under him Hugh Caperton as lieutenant and Daniel Shumate as ensign (B15). On 17 Mar 1784 Hugh Caperton was promoted to captain of militia, Daniel Shoemate to lieutenant, and William Thomas was made ensign.

Daniel (1749) moved his family from then Bedford Co., Va., to then Greenbrier Co., Va., probably in 1780. He appears in the personal property taxlists in Greenbrier Co. from 1782 to 1798 (B16) and in Monroe Co. beginning in 1799 (B7). Daniel settled on the east side of New River at the mouth of Rich Creek and obtained ownership of the lands on which the town of Rich Creek is now located. The mouth of Rich Creek, now included in the upper neck of Giles Co. below (i.e. north of) the Narrows of New River, was included in Monroe Co. (now W.Va.) until 1829 when it was transferred to Giles Co., Va.

Daniel paid no taxes on land in 1782 and 1783 in Greenbrier Co., but began being taxed on 150 a. as assignee of Shelton beginning in 1784; in 1789 the land area on which he was taxed increased to 300 acres (B17). Daniel Shoomate received an assignment of this 300-acre tract from Thomas Shelton on 22 Nov 1785. The official survey of this tract, recorded on 1 Feb 1787, portrays it being located on the east and northeast side of New River including the mouth of Rich Creek and the location of present-day Rich Creek (B18, 16:332). This tract was described as adjoining lands of James Wilson, and entitlement was based on a certificate from the commissioners of the District of Augusta, Botetourt and Greenbrier Counties. A patent was issued to Daniel on 17 Oct 1787. Daniel's copy of the land patent or grant was written on sheepskin and signed by Gov. Edmund Randolph; in 1982 it was in the possession of Mrs. Emory Eaton of Rich Creek, Va. (D12, p. 344).

Daniel's first dwelling on Rich Creek was a log cabin located at what later was the center of the town of Rich Creek. Because of its distance from

a reliable spring on the Shumate property, this log cabin was replaced by a large log house built on a knoll in the eastern part of Rich Creek near the spring. This site later came into the possession of his son Harden, who built a frame house in 1841 about 100 feet in front of the log cabin; a large brick front was added in 1918 by Lula Shumate Gwinn. (Note: this hilltop mansion was visited by JFV about 1970 in conjunction with Aubrey O. Smith.) The mansion site and home, called "Riverside" in later years, was owned by Mrs. Emory Eaton in 1982 (D12).

The pioneer Shumate Cemetery, in which most of the early generations of Shumates were originally buried, later became the Rich Creek Cem.; it was originally located in the center of town. However, in order to make way for a new road through town built about 1910 the bodies--reportedly excepting those dying in the cholera epidemic in the 1870's--were moved to a new cemetery on the top of the hill east of town now known as Sunrise Memorial Gardens. It is reported that the remains of four unmarked graves were placed in a single grave when moved to the present location; one wonders if the remains of Milly and Daniel were included in this single grave since neither their original or reinterment sites can now be identified.

Daniel bought other tracts on Rich Creek over the years. In 1799 Daniel paid taxes in Monroe Co. on the 300-acre grant as well as on tracts of 186 a. and 140 a., the latter described as a new grant (B12). The 186-acre tract, described as being on the small branches of New River and Rich Creek adjoining lands of Daniel Shewmate, was conveyed to him by Henry Willis--both parties then resident of Greenbrier Co.--on 29 Dec 1795 (B19, 1:526). On that same day Daniel Shumate received a survey of 140 a. on the waters of Rich Creek adjoining Henry Willis and Abraham Nettles based on a warrant for 800 a. dated 11 Dec 1793 (B20, 2:379). On 16 July 1808 Daniel Shumate joined Alexander Stewart, Christian Peters, John Norman, Jr., and Henry Willis verifying no objections for a road to be opened through their lands as had been marked out by Jacob Peck, John Campbell, and Tolison Shumate (B5).

In 1812 Daniel paid taxes not only on 300 a. on New River at the mouth of Rich Creek adjoining lands of John Dunn but also on adjoining tracts of 106, 140, and 97 a. (B12). On 13 Mar 1805 a survey of 390 a. on Rich Creek was made to Daniel Shumate; and on 1 Aug 1809 this land was patented to Hugh Caperton, Daniel Shumate, and Christian Peters. On 4 Oct 1816 Daniel Shumate and wife Milly released their interests in undivided 1/3 parts of the 390 a. to the heirs of Hugh Caperton, Sr., and to Christian Peters (B21, F:100), leaving themselves a net 97 a. from the original survey. In 1825--the year before his death--Daniel paid taxes on four adjoining tracts of 106 a., 176 a., 140 a., and 97 a., totaling 519 acres (B12). A 124-acre portion of the original 300-acre grant had been conveyed by Daniel Shoemate and wife Milly to their son Toleson Shoemate on 4 Apr 1818 (B21, F:435).

In his will dated 7 July 1826 and probated Aug 1826 (B22, 2:368), Daniel Shumate of Monroe Co. provided for his wife Milly and named his 12 children. He devised 15 a. to his son Tollison and the home place to his son Harden with various remainder interests in his estate to all of his children. He appointed "my true and trusty friends and loving sons" Tollison and Hardin as his executors. An executor bond was posted by Tolleson and Hardin on 15 Aug 1826 in the amount of \$6000 with James McLaugherty, David Johnston, Joel Stodghill, and John W. Vawter as sureties, and Tollison and Harden were duly appointed executors of Daniel's estate by the Monroe Co. Court (B5).

A power of attorney dated 31 Aug 1826 and given by six of the children of Daniel (1749) and wife Milly to Tollison and Harden Shumate, executors of Daniel, deceased, to convey the lands and negroes devised to them by their father was proved on 7 Jan 1830 by oaths of witnesses Jacob Peck and Elias Hall (B11, C:633). Those giving the power of attorney were Daniel Shumate of Logan Co., Isham Burdette and wife Nancy of Monroe Co., Archibald Burdette and

wife Rhoda of Monroe Co., Larkin Tuggle and wife Malinda of Monroe Co., John Caperton and wife Peggy of Giles Co., and John McDaniel and wife Rachel of Giles Co. As part of the settlement of the estate of Daniel (Sr.), a listing of payments in varying amounts was recorded on 26 Jan 1823 to the following heirs or their representatives: Isaac Carper, Uriah Vermillion, Silas Shumate, John Shumate, John McDaniel of Ohio, John Caperton, Daniel Shumate, Larken Tuggle, John McDaniel (of Giles Co.), Isham Burdit, and Archibald Burdet (B33, #256).

On 10 Feb 1830 Tollison and Hardin Shumate, attorneys for the heirs of Daniel Shumate, conveyed a total of 370 a. located southwest of Peterstown (i.e. on Rich Creek) to John McClaugherty, Jr. This conveyance included three adjoining tracts on Rich Creek: (1) 140 a. granted to Daniel, (2) part of 186 a. assigned to him by Henry Willis, and (3) part of 97 a. (i.e. within the 390-acre survey). Of special note is a maintenance bond given on 26 May 1832 by Hardin Shumate of Giles Co. in which he was bound to Milly Shumate of the same place in the penal amount of \$400 (B23). For the love and affection he bore to Milly [his mother], Hardin agreed "to maintain her in good wholesome diet, lodging, and apparel, also maintenance and sustenance for her natural life." This court record would seem to assure that Milly lived out her remaining life in her original home but now owned by her son Hardin.

DAR membership applications and family tradition generally give Callison as Milly's maiden surname, although Tollison or Campbell are sometimes suggested. One family tradition has it that her father was Rev. Isaac Callison, a former minister of the Reformed Church in Orange Co., Va. The tradition continues in that this man was minister of a church at Lexington, Amherst, Va., from 1773 to 1779, after which he went to Union in then Greenbrier Co., Va., where he died about 1782 leaving a daughter Milly and other children (D1). Although Callisons are known to have resided in Greenbrier Co. in the early days, no confirmed connection have yet been found between them and Daniel Shumate's wife Milly.

Will of Daniel Shumate

IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN: I, Daniel Shumate of the County of Monroe and State of Virginia, being weak in body by reason of affliction but of perfect mind and memory thanks be given unto God, calling into mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this my last will and testament, viz, first I give and recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God who gave it and my body I recommend to the earth to be buried in decent Christian burial at the discretion of my executors, nothing doubting but at the General Resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God; and as touching such worldly estate wherewith it has pleased God to bless me in this life, I devise, dispose, and bequeath of the same in the manner and form following, viz:

First, all my just debts to be paid out of the moneys or levies out of my personal property.

2nd. I give and bequeath unto my well beloved wife Milly, one negro woman named Liza, two beds, bedsteads, and furniture, with whatever household and kitchen furniture she the said Milly may choose to keep, one gray mare, three head of cows, five sheep, and six hogs, all of her the said Milly's own choosing, also one loom and its apparatuses to be equally divided between my eight children and heirs hereafter named at the death of Milly, their mother, (viz) Silas, Daniel, John, Nancy, Peggy, Rhoda, Malinda, and Rachel to be enjoyed by them forever. I also give and bequeath unto my well beloved wife Milly, one negro boy named Grinnage, to be equally divided between my four children and heirs hereafter named at the death of Milly their mother, (viz) Betsey, Silas, John, and Polly to be enjoyed by them forever.

3rd. I give and bequeath unto my well beloved son Tollison, one negro girl named Hetty, also a parcel of land lying on the south side of Rich Creek between said creek and a small branch, said land extending within thirty yards of a fence enclosing a field known by the name of flat field supposed to be fifteen acres be the same more or less to be held and enjoyed by him forever.

4th. I give and bequeath unto my well beloved daughter Betsy fifty dollars to be enjoyed by her forever.

5th. I give and bequeath unto my well beloved sons Silas and John two hundred dollars to be equally divided between them and enjoyed by them forever.

6th. I give and bequeath unto my daughter Polly fifty dollars to be enjoyed by her forever.

7th. I give and bequeath unto my daughter Rhoda sixty dollars to be enjoyed by her forever.

8th. I give and bequeath unto my daughter Malinda eighty dollars to be enjoyed by her forever.

9th. I give and bequeath unto my son Hardin all that tract of land I now live on (other than the part already devised to Tollison) together with so much of the out lands as the following boundary line will enclose (i.e.) from the mouth of a small branch running into Rich Creek on the south side, adjoining the land devised to Tollison Shumate and running up said branch to the forks of the same (close to) and below Larken Tuggle's spring, thence up the right hand fork of said branch or hollow, unto the present wagon road, and with and along said road, leading up New River as far as my lands extend including all the lands I hold between said boundary line and the [New] River to be held and enjoyed by him forever.

10th. I also give and bequeath unto my well beloved children and heirs (viz) Daniel, Nancy, Peggy, Rhoda, Malinda, and Rachel, all the money, slaves, lands, debts, property, and articles not heretofore devised in this my last will and testament, to be equally divided between the above named children and heirs to be enjoyed by them forever.

And I do constitute and appoint my true and trusty friends and loving sons Tollison Shumate and Hardin Shumate the sole executors of this my last will and testament, ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my last will and testament, and I do hereby utterly disallow, revoke, and disannul all former wills, bequeaths, legacies, testaments, and executors by me in any wise heretofore made, declaring this and no other to be my last will and testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal this 7th day of July 1826.

Teste: James McClagherty
his
Stephen x Blankenship
mark
David Johnston

DANIEL SHUMATE (seal)

AT MONROE AUGUST COURT 1826.

The last will and testament of Daniel Shumate was presented in court and proven by the oaths of James McClarity and David Johnston two of the subscribing witnesses thereto, and the same is ordered to be recorded. And on motion of Tollison Shumate and Hardin Shumate, executors therein named who made oath and together with James McClarity, David Johnston, Joel Stodgill, and John H. Vawter, their securities, entered into and acknowledged bond in

the penalty of six thousand dollars conditioned as the law directs, certificate for obtaining probate thereof in due form is granted them."

A copy - Teste: Isaac Hutchinson, C. M. C.

(Recorded Will Book No. 2, page 368.)

(A1, A2, A3, A4, A5, A6, A7, A13, A14, A15, A16, B5, B6, B7, B8, B9, B10, B11, B12, B13, B14, B15, B16, B17, B18, B19, B20, B21, B22, B24, B25, B28, B29, B30, B31, B32, B33, B35, C2, C3, C4, C5, C6, C7, C8, C9, C10, C15, C16, C17, C18, D1, D2, D4, D5, D6, D7, D8, D9, D10, D11, D12, D13, D14, D15, D16, D17, D18, D21, D22, D23, D25, D27, D28)

FAMILY 238-239

WILLIAM LEACH (1740) and SUSANNA HUGHES (1742)

WILLIAM LEACH was b. abt 1740 possibly in Prince Edward Co., Va.; d. 1808 in Monroe Co., W. Va.; md. abt 1762 to SUSANNAH HUGHES, b. abt 1742. Children (Leach)--older children b. in eastern Virginia, younger children in Monroe Co.:

MARY (MOLLY), b. abt 1763; md. 1781 to JAMES JONES. Owned land in Monroe Co. in 1807.

REUBEN, b. abt 1765; md. 1797 to JANE GULLETT. Reuben served on a jury for the District Court at Sweet Spring on 20 May 1790 (B27). Also in 1790 he was surveyed 209 a. on Swope's Knob [and the Sinks], then Greenbrier Co. (B25, S3:31). On 16 Sep 1806 Reuben and wife Jean conveyed 100 a. to George Nickell (B21, B:257).

ESOM, b. abt 1767; md. 29 Oct 1795 in Greenbrier Co. to JANE HANDLEY, b. abt 1769. Children (Leach)--probably all b. in Monroe Co.: William (md. Sarah Harrison), Reuben, Archibald, James, Martha, and Rebecca. Shown in his household in 1810 were three boys and three girls (A1). Esom was appointed a lieutenant in the Greenbrier Co. Militia on 31 July 1798 (B15).

In 1799 Esom paid taxes on 300 a. in the newly organized county of Monroe, this described as a new grant; in 1807 he paid taxes on 300 a. and on 100 a. as assignee of Reuben George (B12). Esom purchased the 100 a. tract on Clem's Fork on 19 Nov 1806 from Reuben George and wife Anne (B21, B:284); on 21 Aug 1807 he and wife Jean sold the 300-acre tract on Big Stony Creek to Reubin George (B21, B:398). In 1809 he paid taxes on 100 a. on the left hand fork of Clem's Creek and 50 a. on Clem's Run of Rich Creek in Monroe Co., but in Jan 1811 sold these tracts to Jean and James Callaway (B21, C:295). Shortly afterwards Esom and family moved to Franklin Co., Ohio (D29).

MATTHEW, b. abt 1769; md. 6 Jan 1795 in Greenbrier Co. to POLLY GULLETT, dau. of Wm. Gullett. Matthew Leach was conveyed by William Gullett and wife Jean a tract of 52 3/4 a. in the Sinks, described as 2 1/2 miles from the courthouse, on 27 Aug 1803 but sold it to Matthew Alexander on 16 Oct 1804 (B21, A:283, 412).

JOHN, b. 1771; md. 11 Feb 1793 in Greenbrier Co., W. Va., to MARTHA GRAY, dau. of John Gray, Sr. John received a survey of 32 a. in the Sinks in 1800 (B25, S1:136).

JOSHUA, b. 12 Feb 1773; d. 9 Oct 1858 in Monroe Co.; md. 26 Feb 1799 in Greenbrier Co. to HANNAH HAWKINS, b. 1774 and d. 13 Dec 1854 in Monroe Co., dau. of William Hawkins. Children (Leach)--b. Monroe Co.: Nathaniel (md. Arianna Kerr), James (md. (1) Ann Davis Prentis, (2) Margaret Boyd Hill), Alexander (md. (1) Isabella Neel, (2) Nancy Martin), William (md. Mary M. Young), Edmund (md.

Anna P. Drummond), Robert W. (md. Susan Young), Andrew (md. Mary Dunsmore), and Amanda M.

Joshua was appointed captain of a troop of cavalry in the Monroe Co. Militia on 21 Aug 1799 (B5). He was a farmer and land owner in Monroe Co.; when his brothers moved away, he remained in the Sinks. He was conveyed 69 a. in the Sinks on 21 Apr 1807 by his parents William and Susanna (B21, B:327). In 1812 he paid taxes on said 69 acres in the Sinks adjoining Matthew Alexander; in 1835 he paid taxes on adjoining tracts of 116 a. and 36 a. described as being at the foot of Swope's Knob (B12).

EDWARD, b. abt 1774; md. 27 Mar 1799 in Greenbrier Co. to CATY WILLIAMS.

EDMUND, b. abt 1775; alive in 1807.

WILLIAM, JR., b. abt 1776; md. 21 Jan 1794 in Greenbrier Co. to JANE THOMPSON. William bought of Charles Hynes and wife Margaret on 16 June 1800 a tract of 79 a. on a branch of Greenbrier River (B21, A:53); he and wife Jean sold this tract described as being on Kellor's Creek to Miles Foster on 15 Sep 1807 (B21, B:403). Wm. Jr. and James, the two youngest sons of William Leach, Sr., were devised equal remainder interests in the home plantation by their father's will in 1807 (B22, 1:94).

JAMES, b. abt 1780; md. 20 Mar 1819 in Monroe Co. to JANE ELCANS, with Hardin Shumate going surety on the marriage bond (C2). James was devised an equal half interest in his father's plantation, and on 20 Sep 1819 he conveyed his interests in both lands and slaves to his brother William Leach (B21, G:154).

*ELIZABETH, b. 28 Dec 1788 in the Sinks, Monroe, W. Va.; d. 3 Feb 1874 in Giles Co., Va.; bur. Rich Creek Cem., Giles, Va.; md. 10 June 1806 in Monroe Co. to HARDIN SHUMATE. (Refer to Family 118-119 for further details.)

"William [Leach], a stone mason, came from Prince Edward [County, Va., to Monroe Co.] at the close of the Revolution with his wife, Susanna Hughes. He was accompanied by Leach Mann, a relative, and by the Gullett, Egner, and Fuller families. His settlement was on the Washington Nickell place in the Sinks, some of his close neighbors being James Gregory and John and William Brown. He owned slaves and left personalty valued at \$274.67. After his death in 1805 [sic 1808] the widow and most of her children went to Kentucky, Joshua, Mary, and Elizabeth remaining in the Sinks. Esom was living on Rich and William Jr. on Kelly's; and Reuben, already married, had been deeded a part of the homestead. About 1815 some of the family came back as far as Charleston with a stone to mark the father's grave, but learning there that the spot could not be identified they returned to Kentucky and have been lost sight of..... Two sisters came with William Sr. to Monroe [Co.]. Susan married Isaac Foster and Nancy married Alexander Clark" (Morton, D15).

William Leach, Sr., began paying taxes on land in Greenbrier Co. in 1788 (B17). On 6 May 1789 William as assignee of William Myers assignee of Samuel Logan received a survey of 170 a. in the Sinks, then in Greenbrier Co. and adjoining William Gullett, Samuel Glass, and William Tincher (B25, S3:28). This tract was patented to William Leach of Greenbrier Co. on 28 June 1790 (B26, 22:369). On 25 Sep 1798 William Leach, Sr., was conveyed by Andrew Kincaid and wife Mary another tract of 215 a. in the Sinks (B19); this tract adjoined the lands of John Madison, John Right, William Tincher, James Smith, James McAfee, and John Parsons. From this 215-acre tract William and Susanna conveyed 100 a. to Reuben Leach on 15 May 1804 (B21, A:337) and 92 a. described as located on Swope's Knobs to George Nickell on 16 Oct 1804 (B21, A:412).

In his will dated 3 Sep 1807 and probated April 1808 in Monroe Co. (B22, 1:94), William left a marriage/life right to his wife Susan and then equally to his two youngest sons Wm., Jr., and James. Absolem Leach, one of the three

witnesses to the will, is believed to have been a brother or other close relative of Wm., Sr. His not being mentioned in William Leach's will probably rules him out of being another son. Little is known about Absolom except that he was living in Monroe Co. in the Sinks in the early 1800's. On 17 Sep 1801 he gave a deed in trust to Conrad Keller covering his personal property (B21, A:171); and on 18 May 1813 he sold to John Foster for \$71 personal property including three horses (B21, D:89).

The heirs of William Leach paid taxes in 1809 and 1812 on 101 a. in the Sinks adjoining Matthew Alexander, with Susannah Leach paying taxes on 170 a. located in the Sinks adjoining Matthew Alexander in 1816 (B12). In a series of three deeds Susan Leach, widow of William, deceased, and sons James Leach and William Leach (and their spouses Jane and Elizabeth, respectively) conveyed their sole interests in the 170-acre plantation left by William Leach Sr., to George Nickell. Conveyed on 18 Mar 1817 was 28 3/4 a., plus an adjoining small tract of 8 1/2 a. out of 215 a. conveyed to William Leach on 25 Sep 1798 by Andrew Kincaid (B21, F:240); on 8 June 1818, 22 acres (B21, F:511); and on 13 Mar 1821, the remaining 128 a. of the 170-acre grant (B21, G:311).

Will of William Leach

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN.

I, William Leach of the County of Monroe being sick and weak in body but of sound mind and disposing memory for which I thank God and calling to mind the uncertainty of human life and being desirous to dispose of all such worldly estate as it hath pleased God to bless me with, I give and bequeath the same in manner following that is to say:

I give unto my wife Susan Leach my plantation together with the household and kitchen furniture, my negro girl called Seal, two work horses, and utensils sufficient to work said plantation, two milk cows, and two yews; those above mentioned properties I give and bequeath unto my wife during her life or widowhood and after her decease or marriage I wish the same to be divided as follows, to wit:

I give to my son Reuben Leach ten dollars, unto my son John Leach ten dollars, and after the marriage or decease of my wife I wish the plantation to be equally divided between my two youngest sons William Leach and James Leach, and after the marriage or death of my wife I wish all the movable part of my property to be sold and the money equally divided between my children as follows: Molly Jones, Matthew Leach, Joshua Leach, Edward Leach, Edmund Leach, Esom Leach, William Leach, James Leach, and Elizabeth Shumate, except my negro woman Nan and her I wish freed at my death and the residue of my movable property sold and the money divided as above stated.

And lastly I do hereby constitute and appoint my son Joshua Leach and Harden Shumate executors to this my last will and testament and hereby revoking all other or former wills or testament by me heretofore made. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal this 3rd day of September 1807.

William x Leach

his

mark

Signed, sealed, published, and declared
as and for the last will and testament
the above named William Leach
in presence of us

George Foster
Absalom Leach
her
Jain x Foster
mark

AT MONROE APRIL COURT 1808

This last will and testament of William Leach deceased was presented in court and proven by the oaths of George Foster and Jane Foster subscribing witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded. And on the motion of Joshua Leach one of the executors within named who made oath according to law and he together with John Foster, Isaac Paul, and John Lemon his security entered into bond in the sum of two thousand dollars. Certificate is therefore granted him for obtaining probate thereof in due form.

Teste: Isaac Hutchinson, clerk"

(This will recorded in Monroe Co. Will Book No. 1, page 94.)

(A1, B5, B7, B12, B15, B17, B19, B21, B22, B25, B26, B27, C2, C3, C7, C11, D15, D19)

FAMILY XXX-XXX

JEAN DELA SHUMATE (1665) and ELIZABETH (BOURGEOIS) BOUVET (1670)

JEAN DELA SHUMATE (or CHAUMETTE) was b. abt 1665 at Rochechouart, Poitiers, France; d. 1728/1730 at Elk Run, Fauquier (then Stafford) Co., Va.; md. (1) about 1690 to unknown (reportedly d. abt 1694 without issue); md. (2) 29 Sep 1695 at French Huguenot Church, London, Eng., to ELIZABETH (BOURGEOIS) BOUVET, b. abt 1670 in France and d. about 1715 possibly on the Island of Martinique. Children (dela Shumate)--b. England or Island of Martinique:

ANTOINE (possible son), b. abt 1705; no evidence of connection in Elk Run area.

JOHN, b. 1708 (age 16 or over in 1724); d. Oct 1784 in Fauquier Co., Va.; md. about 1728 in Fauquier (then Stafford) Co. to JUDITH (JUDAH) BAILEY, b. abt 1708 and d. after 1790 probably in Fauquier Co. Children (Shumate)--all b. in now Fauquier Co.: William (md. Ann McCormick), Joshua (md. Elizabeth), Daniel (reportedly md. Sarah Ann possibly surname James), Thomas (md. Elizabeth Brown Shepherd), James, John (md. (1) Winifred Oxford, (2) Susannah Crump), Jemima (md. John Winn), Lettice (md. John Nelson), and Bailey (md. Mary Dodson).

John and Judith spent their married life in the Elk Run area of present-day Fauquier Co. In his will dated 19 May 1783 and probated 25 Oct 1784 in Fauquier Co. (B4, 2:47), "John Shumate Sr. of Fauquier Co." gave a life right in his estate to his wife Judith and appointed her along with Thomas Helm and John Nelson as executors. In his will he named nine children [shown above]. He gave to son Thomas the land the latter was living on after the death of Thomas' mother. To Captain Jonathan Gibson he gave land described as being on the east side of a branch of Elk Run between the house of Thomas Shumate and the "house I now live in." Witnesses to the will were Thomas Helm, William Conway, and John Kerr. An appraisement of John Shumate, Sr.'s estate was made in October 1784 and accepted for record on 22 Aug 1785 (B4, 2:68).

John (1708) is the only dela Shumate/Shumate of the second generation in the Elk Run area for whom the names of his surviving children are proven. However, their subsequent identification, including marriage, has often been based on circumstantial evidence; and a "best-fit" solution has often resulted.

SAMUEL, b. 1710 (age 14 in 1724); d. prior 1790 probably in South Carolina; md. abt 1732 in Fauquier (then Stafford or Prince William) Co., Va., to LUCY BLACKWELL, b. abt 1714 and d. after 1810, dau. of (Capt.) Samuel Blackwell and wife Mary Downing Hudnall. Children (Shumate) according to Riley (D2): Samuel, Blackwell, Moses, two daughters (names unknown), John, and daughter (name unknown).

Shortly after his marriage, Samuel became involved in a rebellion concerning tobacco taxes and had to flee his home area in the Elk Run area. It is believed his migration with his family to Chesterfield Co., S. Car., occurred prior to 1740. Samuel had died prior to 1790 when his widow Lucy Shumate was listed as a head of household in Chesterfield Co., S. Car. Some of his descendants apparently migrated into Tennessee about 1800 (D2).

DANIEL, b. 1712 (age 12 in 1724); d. after 1772, possibly in Prince William Co., Va.; md. abt 1736 in Fauquier (probably then Prince William) Co. to MARY ELIZABETH TALIAFERRO, b. abt 1714, d. after 1755, probable dau. of John Taliaferro and wife Sarah Smith. Children by Elizabeth Taliaferro (Shumate)--first three listed by Von Stauffenberg (D1) and all by Riley (D2): Deveril, Winifred (md. George Adams), Daniel, Donald, David (md. Elizabeth, possible maiden surname Evans), Richard, John (md. (1) unknown, (2) Margaret Snapp), and Thomas. Daniel (1712) md. (2) 1 Feb 1757 possibly in Frederick Co., Md., to MARY ELIZABETH HOFFMAN, b. abt 1730 and d. after 1771. Children by Elizabeth Hoffman (Shumate)--as listed by Riley (D2): Susanna (md. John Wyatt) and Lydia (md. Joseph George).

Von Stauffenberg (D1) concluded that Daniel (1712) was the Daniel that md., as his third wife, Tabitha Dotson about 1769; but this hypothesis has been mostly discredited (D2). Unfortunately, none of the children of Daniel (1712) are documented by original records; and the above list seems to include principally the "leftover" Shumates of the Fauquier Co. area not proven or otherwise placed.

The following has been summarized by Riley (D2) as the probable origins of Jean dela Shumate or Chaumette (sic John Shumate the elder): native of Rouchechouart, Generalite of Poitiers, France; son of Daniel dela Chaumette, a barrister of Rochechouart and wife Marie Aucouturier; went to England to avoid persecution for being a Huguenot (French Protestant); immigrated to Island of Martinique where he lived several years; and along with three sons settled on Elk Run in what was then Stafford Co., Va., in 1720. (Note: the Elk Run area became part of Prince William Co. in 1731 but lastly Fauquier Co. in 1758.) When married at the Huguenot Church in London (C1), Jean dela Shumate and Elizabeth Bouvet (nee Bourgeois) were widower and widow. Their prior children, if any, are unknown.

Listed in 1624 in Overwharton Parish, which then included the Elk Run area in present-day Fauquier Co., were the following "tenders of tobacco" (D3, p. 160):

- a. John Shumate, one tithable, 7,372 tobacco plants; household included Samuel Shumate, aged 14 years, and Daniel Shumate, aged 12 years.
- b. John Shumate, Jr., aged 16 years or older; one tithable, 4,120 tobacco plants.

On 9 Oct 1723 John Dilasumate of Overwharton Parish, Stafford Co., was conveyed by William Allen of the same place a tract of 200 acres adjoining Elk Run and lands of William Hogan and Joseph Allen (B1, 1722-8:49-51). This 200 acres was part of 840 a. granted to the said William Allen on 14 Mar 1718/1719. The conveyance was witnessed by Thomas Timmons and John Allen and proved on 9 Oct 1723. When John dela Shumate was listed in the 1623 rent rolls (D3), the taxes on his 200 a. were recorded as "not demanded." Jean (or John) dela Shumate's death probably occurred between 1728 and 1730.

All probate or other courthouse records that might have pertained to the estate of Jean (1665) were destroyed in subsequent years. Whether by will or by other court action, the 200 acres on Elk Run was later divided between Jean's sons John (1708) and Daniel (1712). It was not until 22 Oct 1770 that Daniel Shumate and wife Mary of Prince William Co., Va., sold their 100-acre part for L30 to John dela Shumate of Fauquier Co. (B3, 4:128). The tract being sold was described as adjoining lands of the said John dela Shumate (i.e. presumably his 100-acre part) and lands of John Kerr, Nicholas George, and John Neilsen); William Blackwell witnessed the deed. Explained in the deed was that this 100 acres, originally located in Stafford Co., had been conveyed by William Allen to John dela Shumate and given by him to his son Daniel. Von Stauffenberg (D1) reported that John and his brother Daniel were each listed as owning 100 acres of land in Prince William Co. in 1752-4; but documentation was not provided.

Numerous attempts have been made in the past to assemble the first century of Shumates living in present-day Fauquier Co. into family units, but none of these attempts have been fully successful. This frustration has largely resulted from near total absence of church and family recordings or their survival for the early-generation Shumates in Virginia. Also, excepting for John Shumate (1708) no Shumate wills or other probates naming heirs have been located for the Elk Run Shumates prior to 1800. Furthermore, the frequent use of Daniel and John and even William in naming the Shumate children has added to the confusion.

The ancestry of Daniel Shumate (1749-1826), who settled about 1780 at the mouth of Rich Creek in present-day Giles Co., Va., is a priority example of early-day Shumate lineage problems. That he was a descendant of the original immigrant, Jean dela Shumate, has widespread if not universal acceptance. Probably the most intensive effort to assemble the Fauquier County Shumates including their out migrations and demonstrate the parentage of Daniel of Rich Creek was made by Riley (D2). Riley basically took the stance of accepting the many hypotheses of Von Stauffenberg (D1) except where disproved or found to be totally unacceptable. After over 50 years of hypotheses and analysis of existing evidence, both direct and circumstantial, it must be concluded that the parentage of Daniel Shumate of Rich Creek remains unproven!

The parentage of Daniel Shumate of Rich Creek seems to center around three principal hypotheses (any one of which seems about as likely as the other two):

- (1) He was the son of Daniel Shumate (estimated b. 1734), who was the son of John (1708) son of Jean (1665). This solution has been championed by both Von Stauffenberg (D1) and Riley (D2), and partly because of that is now probably the most commonly held hypothesis. Daniel Shumate (1734) married Sarah Ann (possibly with James as her maiden surname); in his will dated 29 Jan 1806 Daniel (1734) named children Samuel, Duanna, Mark, William, Dinah, and Judah (or Judith) (B4, 4:185). However, since no son Daniel was named in the will, this hypothesis requires the assumption that the testator either forgot or chose not to mention a son Daniel. This hypothesis also requires the assumption that Daniel

(1734) was indeed the Daniel son of John (1708) since there appears to be no documentary linkage between the two; it also requires a rather tight fitting between the generations.

On the other hand there is slight circumstantial evidence linking Samuel of Daniel (1734) with Daniel of Rich Creek: both served from Fauquier Co. in the Revolutionary War (or at least Samuel and some Daniel did); after leaving Fauquier Co. Daniel settled temporarily in Bedford Co., Va., while Samuel settled in nearby Henry Co.; and both named sons Tollison, but any specific significance of the name Tollison is unknown. However, any post-1780 association between the two is unknown.

- (2) He was Daniel son of John (1708) rather than a grandson (as above). This hypothesis has been championed by Aubrey O. Smith (D4) and was apparently the pre-1964 hypothesis of the Rich Creek Shumates (D5). If Daniel of Rich Creek was born in 1749, as is concluded here, John and Judith would have been only about 41 years of age at the time of Daniel's birth. This hypothesis would leave Daniel (1734) without a parental connection, unless he might have been a son of Daniel (1712) son of John (1665).
- (3) He was a son of Daniel (1712) son of John (1665). Since none of the apparent children of Daniel (1712) are documented, there is ample opportunity for Daniel of Rich Creek to be fitted in here. Daniel of Rich Creek did name children Daniel and Elizabeth, the latter being the given name of both apparent wives of Daniel (1712). Tightly spacing generations would even permit Daniel of Rich Creek to have been a grandson of Daniel (1712), but this seems unlikely!

Shumate family analysts have had the challenge of not only "allocating" parentage to Daniel (1749) of Rich Creek and Daniel (1734) of Fauquier Co. but also to Daniel (b. about 1745; d. Oct 1784) of Fauquier Co., who married about 1769 to Tabitha Dodson. This Daniel had children by Tabitha including Mary, Margaret, Lewis, Nancy, Charlotte, Strother D., Daniel (apparently md. Jane McDavid in 1805), and Thomas, all born about the same time period as were the children of Daniel of Rich Creek. Lastly, William (1728) of John (1708) had a son Daniel, but it appears probable this was Daniel (1769) who married Mellender (Milly) Skinner in 1791. The other sons of John (1708)--i.e. Joshua, Thomas, John, James, and Bailey--either had no son David or are otherwise unlikely to be the father of Daniel of Rich Creek. The early exodus of Samuel (1710) son of John (1665) from the Elk Run area seems to rule out any potential for his being an ancestor of Daniel of Rich Creek.

(B1, B2, B3, B4, C1, D1, D2, D3, D4, D5)

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

A. Census Records

- A1. 1810 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A2. 1860 Census of Lawrence Co., Ohio.
- A3. 1850 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A4. 1850 Census of Mercer Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A5. 1850 Census of Jackson Co., Ohio.
- A6. 1850 Census of Lawrence Co., Ohio.
- A7. 1860 Census of Giles Co., Va.
- A8. 1820 Census of Giles Co., Va.
- A9. 1820 Census of Jackson Co., Ohio.
- A10. 1850 Census of Giles Co., Va.

- A11. 1860 Census of Monroe Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A12. 1860 Census of Mercer Co., Va. (W. Va.).
- A13. 1850 Census of Gallia Co., Ohio.
- A14. 1820 Census of Lawrence Co., Ohio.
- A15. 1830 Census of Lawrence Co., Ohio.
- A16. 1840 Census of Lawrence Co., Ohio.

B. Land, Probate, Tax, and Court Records.

- B1. Stafford Co., Va., Deeds.
- B2. Monroe Co., W. Va., Estate Records (Files).
- B3. Fauquier Co., Va., Deeds.
- B4. Fauquier Co., Va., Wills.
- B5. Monroe Co., W. Va., Court Records.
- B6. Giles Co., Va., Wills.
- B7. Monroe Co., W. Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B8. Lawrence Co., Ohio, Taxlists.
- B9. Lawrence Co., Ohio, Deeds.
- B10. Jackson Co., Ohio, Deeds.
- B11. Giles Co., Va., Deeds.
- B12. Monroe Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B13. Bedford Co., Va., Deeds.
- B14. Franklin Co., Va., Deeds.
- B15. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Court Orders.
- B16. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B17. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Land Books (Taxlists).
- B18. Virginia Land Surveys.
- B19. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B20. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Surveys.
- B21. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deeds.
- B22. Monroe Co., W. Va., Wills and Inventories.
- B23. Giles Co., Va., Court Records.
- B24. Giles Co., Va., Personal Property Taxlists.
- B25. Monroe Co., W. Va., Surveys.
- B26. Virginia Land Patents and Grants.
- B27. District Court (6th) of Greenbrier, Botetourt, Kanawha, and
Montgomery Counties, Sweet Springs, W. Va.
- B28. Jackson Co., Ohio, Tax Record.
- B29. Jackson Co., Ohio, Clerk of Courts Journal.
- B30. Gallia Co., Ohio, Taxlists.
- B31. Jackson Co., Ohio, Taxlists.
- B32. Jackson Co., Ohio, County Court Index.
- B33. Monroe Co., W. Va., Estate Records (Files).
- B34. Giles Co., Va., Land Grants.
- B35. Fayette Co., W. Va., Deeds.

C. Vital, Church, and Cemetery Records.

- C1. French Huguenot Church, Threadneedle St., London, Eng.
- C2. Composite Lists of Marriage Bonds, Parental Permits, and Minister
Returns, Monroe Co., W. Va. (1799-1850); by Aubrey O. Smith
(comp.); 1962; Beckeley, W. Va.
- C3. Raleigh Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C4. Giles Co., Va., Marriages.
- C5. Fayette Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C6. Jackson Co., Ohio, Marriages.
- C7. Greenbrier Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C8. Gallia Co., Ohio, Marriages.
- C9. Family Bible of Tollison Shumate (found in D4).
- C10. Sunrise Memorial Gardens (Rich Creek Cem.), Rich Creek, Giles, W.
Va.
- C11. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deaths.

- C12. Giles Co., Va., Deaths.
- C13. Monroe Co., W. Va., Deaths.
- C14. Mercer Co., W. Va., Marriages.
- C15. Sandfork Baptist Cem., Walnut Twp., Gallia, Ohio.
- C16. McDaniel Cem., Walnut Twp., Gallia, Ohio.
- C17. Jackson Co., Ohio, Deaths.
- C18. Horton Cem., Jefferson Twp., Jackson, Ohio

D. Compiled and Miscellaneous Records.

- D1. The Shumate Family: A Genealogy; by Theodor-Friedrich Von Stauffenberg; 1964; Phyllis E. Hedrick Duplicating Services, Washington, D.C.; 273 p.
- D2. History of the Shumate Family, Kentucky Pioneers; by Robert S. Riley; 1992; McDowell Pub., Utica, Ky.
- D3. Register of Overwharton Parish, Stafford County, Virginia, 1723-1758, and Sundry Historical and Genealogical Notes; by George H. S. King; 1961; Fredricksburg, Va.
- D4. Personal Records of Aubrey O. Smith, 811 S. Kanawha St., Beckley, W. Va. 25801.
- D5. Personal Records of Haskell D. Shumate, Star Route 4, Box 30-C, Union, W. Va. 24983.
- D6. Archibald and Rhoda Shumate Burdette Bible (typewritten copy provided by Mrs. Burdett Bateson of Point Pleasant, W. Va.).
- D7. Historical Register of Virginians in the Revolution, Soldiers, Sailors, Marines, 1775-1783; by John H. Gwathmey; 1979 (Reprint); Genealogical Pub. Co., Baltimore, Md.; 872 p.
- D8. Personal Records of Mrs. Mary Adair, Rich Creek, Va.
- D9. DAR Membership Applications; National Soc. of Dau. of Amer. Rev., Washington, D.C.
- D10. A New River Heritage, 4 vols.; by William Sanders; 1991-1994; McClain Printing Co., Parsons, W. Va.; 320 p. 400 p., 332 p., 429 p.
- D11. Personal Records of Ruth Carpenter Hall, 4524 North Versailles, Dallas, Texas.
- D12. Giles County, Virginia, History [and] Families; by Giles Co. Hist. Soc.; 1982; Pearisburg, Va.
- D13. West Virginia SAR Membership Applications (#70610).
- D14. Personal Records of Mrs. Olivia Anderson, 9801 Singleton Drive, Bethesda, Md.
- D15. History of Monroe Co., W. Va.; by Oren F. Morton; 1916; McClure Pub. Co., Staunton, Va.
- D16. Conrad Peters and wife Clara Snidow: Their Descendants and Their Ancestry; by Okey Erwin Peters; not dated; Paducah Printing Co., Paducah, Ky.; 229 p.
- D17. Personal Records of Mrs. Harold E. McNaill, 1715 Pembroke Lane, Topeka, Kan. 66614.
- D18. Personal Records of Mrs. L. W. Ledgerwood, South Hudson Ave., Tulsa, Okla.
- D19. Personal Records of Mrs. Grace Thorpe, Route 1, Box 1060, Gridley, Calif.
- D20. The History of the Family McClaugherty; by James D. McClaugherty; 1966; C&M Printing, Dayton, Ohio; not paged.
- D21. Adam's Ancestors: Clark-Harvey Genealogy, Vol. 1; by Thomas Nathan Clark; 1981; Napierville, Ill.; 296 p.
- D22. The Wolfensberger-Wolfersberger Family; by Raymond Martin Bell; 1987; Washington, Pa.
- D23. History of Summers County from the Earliest Settlement to the Present Time; by James H. Miller; 1908; Hinton, W. Va.
- D24. Family Bible of Harden Shumate (originally in possession of Mary Adair, Rich Creek, Va. [D4]).
- D25. Personal Records of James H. Martin, Bluefield, W, Va.

- D26. Personal Records of Mrs. C. T. Bishop, Yards, Va.
D27. Ancestral File, Family History Library, Salt Lake City, Utah.
D28. The Henry McDaniel Family, 1755-1975; by Esta McDaniel Lee; 1975;
Dayton, Ohio.
D29. The Making of a Township: Fairmount Township, Grant County,
Indiana, 1829-1917; by Edgar M. Baldwin (Ed.); 1917(?);
Edgar Baldwin Printing Co., Fairmount, Ind.